

Pursuit of the Truth #Chapter 902: The Crazy Dao Kong - Read Pursuit of the Truth Chapter 902: The Crazy Dao Kong

Chapter 902: The Crazy Dao Kong

At the instant Dao Kong looked over, the excited voice of the host reverberated through the auction hall once again.

"Perhaps some of you have already guessed what this treasure is. That's right... It is... the item that only those who are direct descendants of True Morning Dao World's Morning Dao Sect can obtain, and every single one of them can only have one of them in their lives... the Sacred Constellation Robe!

"The Sacred Constellation Robe contains the most powerful divine ability of Morning Dao Sect which can make the person who wears it enslave all manner of lives, and this item will grow until the strongest person appears in each generation of direct descendants of Morning Dao Sect!

"If there are those who are afraid of True Morning Dao World here, then you must absolutely not buy this Sacred Constellation Robe, or you will bring a great disaster upon your heads. However, to my fellow Daoists from Divine Essence Star Ocean, this is the best chance for you to investigate Morning Dao Sect!

"Once you have understood this item completely, you might even be able to find the secrets of Morning Dao Sect. In fact, there is no need for you to be worried about Morning Dao Sect's revenge, since you are here!

"Those from the other three Great True Worlds, if you wanted to obtain a Sacred Constellation Robe normally, you would need to kill a direct descendant of Morning Dao Sect, and this would incite a war between several Great True Worlds. However, as of now, you can just buy this item and you will obtain the best way to research Morning Dao Sect's secrets!

"Those from True Morning Dao World, if you manage to buy this item and bring it back to Morning Dao Sect, then with how Morning Dao Sect values each of their direct descendants, this would surely be a great meritorious service for you!"

As that excited voice reverberated in the air, Dao Kong stood up from his chair. In his rush, he even knocked his wine cup away, and it spilled onto the ground.

However, he did not pay any attention to it. His gaze was fixed entirely on... the Sacred Constellation Robe that was brought out at that moment and revealed before the eyes of the people in the auction hall!

Shock appeared on his face, and booms rang out in his mind. With just one glance, he could tell that this was not an imitation, but a real Sacred Constellation Robe. This was something only the direct descendants of Morning Dao Sect could obtain. In fact, he could even sense a bloody aura about that Sacred Constellation Robe. He felt like he could even vaguely hear his family member's shrill roars before he died, which were left on that Sacred Constellation Robe.

"I can tell all of you with certainty that this is the first and only Sacred Constellation Robe Black Ink Auction has ever put for auction. It has never appeared before, and in the future... it might never appear again.

"This is your only chance. The starting bid for this Sacred Constellation Robe is 10,000,000 crystals!" There was an incredibly infectious force contained within the voice of the auction host. As his voice echoed in the air, all the people in the auction hall instantly fell silent.

Within their gazes were greed, surprised delight, and also mockery. There were also plenty of other gazes that instantly gathered on the rooms around the area, searching... for those who came from True Morning Dao World.

They longed to see the expressions of those from True Morning Dao World when they saw the Sacred Constellation Robe. It would definitely be a sight worth seeing.

"Damn it!"

Dao Kong's expression twisted, and he kicked away the woman who was kneeling by his side, then took large strides towards the screen of light in front of him to stare intently at the Sacred Constellation Robe. His relaxed attitude and composure were completely gone by then.

He hated Black Ink Planet for daring to put this item up for auction and despised the auction host down to very core of his being. That person had spoken in far too much detail, and those details had been offered as if he could not wait for the alien races from Divine Essence Star Ocean to immediately place their bids to buy the item.

Besides, it was just as he said, if those members of the alien races from Divine Essence Star Ocean bought the item, they would be too far from True Morning Dao World's reach, making it impossible reach them.

However, even if the alien races from Divine Essence Star Ocean did not buy this item, but one of the other three Great True Worlds bought it, then it would be just as the auction host had said. They would have bought the item from the auction, so there was

no killing involved. If Morning Dao Sect wanted to retrieve that Sacred Constellation Robe, then they would need to offer a price that was even higher than what these people had offered when they bought the item.

However, this was not the worst-case scenario. The worst was... if he just watched someone else just buy that Sacred Constellation Robe before his eyes. No matter what reason it was, be it because he did not have enough crystals or something else, as long as he let someone else buy that Sacred Constellation Rob, Dao Kong would have to bear the rage of Morning Dao Sect. Even if he was a direct descendant, the Sect Elders would still show him the definition of ruthlessness.

"Damn it! Damn it!" Dao Kong growled out, and his eyes instantly became bloodshot.

He had never expected to run into such a thing in Black Ink Planet.

He knew well that each of Sacred Constellation Robes that belonged to a direct descendant of Morning Dao Sect was incredibly important, and they were recorded in detail within the sect's record books. Once a member of their family died, it meant that something big had happened!

However, he had been in Divine Essence Star Ocean for more than a thousand years and had never paid any attention to this. After all, the Sect Elders would definitely launch a full investigation if any of their family members died. He would need to return to the sect to know just who it was.

However, before he came to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, he had heard about cases when Morning Dao Sect lost their Sacred Constellation Robes. Two of them had been retrieved after, but there was one that had been lost twenty thousand years ago and not a single clue of it had been found. No matter what sort of method Morning Dao Sect used to look for it, none of them yielded any results.

When blood capillaries filled Dao Kong's eyes, a light chuckle reached his ears. That chuckle seemed to echo in the air, and he could not see the person who had laughed.

"Shut up!" Dao Kong turned his head around and swept his gaze across the room.

"Whether I laugh or not is my business, what does it have to do with you? If Morning Dao Sect learns that you did not interfere and allowed someone else to buy that Sacred Constellation Robe, I'd like to see what sort of explanation you'll give," a woman said in a light voice.

Dao Kong's expression grew incredibly dark. Just as he was about to speak, after a brief period of dead silence, voices calling out to place their bids immediately rang in the air.

"Interesting. I'll offer 11,000,000 crystals for that."

"Haha! 15,000,000!"

"How could you all be so stingy with your money? I'll offer 30,000,000!"

The voices placing their bids landed heavy blows in Dao Kong's mind and heart. He clenched his fists. He understood deep within him that the people in the area knew that True Morning Dao World would definitely buy the item, which was why they intentionally jacked up the price.

In fact, if he did not manage to buy the item, then if Morning Dao Sect wanted to retrieve it afterwards, they would need to offer a price that was several times higher than at which it was initially sold. It could be said that this was a deal where they would definitely profit and not suffer any losses.

Of course, the prerequisite was that they had the right to stand as equals with Morning Dao Sect, or else, they would only be asking for death if they jacked up the price.

Su Ming looked at the things happening in the auction hall, and a smile appeared on his lips. He had originally not wanted to bring out that Sacred Constellation Robe, but since Dao Kong did not have any intention to participate in the auction, Su Ming needed to bring out an item that Dao Kong would be forced to buy.

Su Ming was not worried that there would be other people who would manage to buy the robe either. He knew that this was a robe that Dao Kong would be determined to get. If someone else bought it, then it would definitely be something that would cause Dao Kong to go mad.

"This thing is priceless. How could a mere 30,000,000 crystals be enough for this robe's status. True Sacred Yin World will offer... 50,000,000!"

"Since True Sacred Yin World offered this price, then the Emperor of Abyss' True World will naturally not fall behind. 70,000,000!"

"80,000,000!" a voice with a slightly strange accent stated. When everyone heard it, they instantly knew that the owner of it was not from the four Great True Worlds, but from... the alien race of Divine Essence Star Ocean!

"100,000,000 crystals!" Dao Kong could no longer just sit around. In fact, he did not have his followers offer a price but placed the bid himself. His voice echoed in the entire auction hall, stirring up plenty of chuckles.

"This robe belongs to True Morning Dao World, and all those who dare to compete will have to think about the vengeance True Morning Dao World will bring upon them. There is a bloody aura on that robe, and even though it has been there for a long time, this concerns the death of a family member from Morning Dao Sect!"

"All of those who participate in this auction will make me suspect that this item actually belongs to you, and you are using this auction to make it legally belong to you instead of owning it in secret, thereby washing off the blood feud between you and Morning Dao Sect!"

Dao Kong was not a fool. He was a person with great potential and True Morning Dao World's kismet, so there was no way he would be an average person.

In just a moment, he had thought of these words, and it immediately made the people from the other Great True Worlds who wanted to place a bid unable to help themselves but to pause in their actions.

"That Dao Kong sure reacts quickly, but the more he reacts this way, the better." Su Ming smiled faintly while he watched the storm raging in the auction hall. He knew that Dao Kong would definitely walk into the trap he had set this time.

"130,000,000," the strange voice from Divine Essence Star Ocean's alien race said again. There was a raspy quality to that voice, and even though the accent was unusual, but the ancient feeling within it still showed the speaker's age.

Perhaps other bystanders would pay heed to True Morning Dao World, but the alien races from Divine Essence Star Ocean were not all bothered by some True World. The distance between them was too far great, and even if True Morning Dao World was enraged, it would still find it difficult to rain much vengeance on the alien races in Divine Essence Star Ocean.

"150,000,000!"

Dao Kong's expression was completely twisted, and a ferocious look appeared on his face. His heart was bleeding at the loss of his crystals, and he knew that there was no way he would be able to complete his mission this time, but if he obtained that Sacred Constellation Robe, it would be seen as a meritorious deed when he returned to Morning Dao Sect. No one would then be too bothered by the fact that he did not complete his mission.

"200,000,000." A light chuckle echoed in the air. The appearance of that voice immediately stunned the cultivators in the auction hall, because the woman's voice had come from Dao Kong's room.

"Xu Hui!" Dao Kong turned around and glared at the air around him, almost gritting his teeth in the process.

"I will buy this item and offer it as a gift to Morning Dao Sect in order to break off my engagement with you. That should be enough, don't you think?" The woman let out a tinkling laughter as she spoke.

There was no way Dao Kong would agree to this. Even if Xu Hui buying that Sacred Constellation Robe would result in no loss to him in terms of crystals and he could continue to finish his task, he would have actually suffered a loss. He would lose a wife and the opportunity to reach a breakthrough as he practiced his first dual cultivation when he reached Plane Kalpa Realm. On top of that, if Xu Hui broke off an engagement with him, his reputation in True Morning Dao World would suffer a heavy blow.

This was something the proud Dao Kong could not accept.

"300,000,000!" he said in a dark voice.

Chapter 903: Possessing Dao Kong

Once Dao Kong raised the bid, the entire auction hall fell silent. Three hundred million was enough to be called an outrageous price!

It could not be said whether it was worth or not worth it to buy a single Sacred Constellation Robe for that sort of price. After all, those unrelated had only heard about the general functions of the Sacred Constellation Robes. The only ones who truly knew about them were still the direct descendants from Morning Dao Sect.

In fact, even Dao Kong himself felt continuous pain in his heart when he said the price, as if he had just been stabbed by a sharp sword. This price could be said to contain all his savings.

However, he now was holding a tiger by the tail. Even if he needed to borrow crystals, he had to buy that Sacred Constellation Robe. In fact, this matter concerned his fiancée as well. Because of that, he could simply not give up on that Sacred Constellation Robe. Even if he ended up crushing his teeth from clenching them too hard while competing for this robe, he would still have to buy it.

At the moment he placed that bid, Xu Hui chuckled softly. She knew that breaking off the engagement was definitely not an easy feat. This matter was tied to the traditions between Morning Dao Sect and Phoenix Sect, so there was no certainty that one Sacred Constellation Robe would be enough to break that tradition.

Besides, even though she found Dao Kong an eyesore, she knew in her heart that she was going to end up as his wife. By making him pay a few more crystals, she was simply venting her frustrations. After letting out a light chuckle, she did not continue placing anymore bids.

After a brief period of silence within the auction hall, even the alien race from Divine Essence Star Ocean did not continue placing any bids. After all, three hundred million crystals was really not a small sum.

The middle-aged man who was the host of the auction still maintained a smile on his face. Once he swept his gaze across the auction hall, he let out a hearty laugh.

"Since no one else is going to compete for this item, then this Sacred Constellation Robe that has been put on auction for the first time over the course of numerous years in Black Ink Planet will belong to True Morning Dao Sect!"

Once he said that, two graceful ladies walked out of the air behind him. They picked up the Sacred Constellation Robe and disappeared without a trace.

Only at that moment did Dao Kong breathe out a sigh of relief in his heart.

The auction continued. The middle-aged man continued bringing out one item after another, and the lively air that previously existed in the auction hall started rising once again.

The voices calling out to place their bids rose and fell, but Dao Kong heard none of that. He turned his head and looked towards the door to his room.

Another ten something breaths passed before the sound of someone knocking on the door rang in the air.

Once the door was pushed open, the Sacred Constellation Robe was brought in a box by the two graceful ladies into Dao Kong's room with respect radiating from their actions.

The woman with pointy ears in the room immediately walked forward to accept the box. Once she examined it carefully, she placed it in front of Dao Kong. His gaze landed on the box, and a glint appeared in his eyes.

"Nine seniors of mine, I would have to trouble you to help me check whether someone has done anything to this robe."

Once Dao Kong said these words, the nine old men who had their eyes shut and were not far away from Dao Kong lifted their right hands at the same time and pushed towards the box through the air. Distortions immediately appeared around the item.

As the air distorted, the box was reduced to powder and scattered without a single sound, revealing the Sacred Constellation Robe within. That robe floated up, and even though the air around it was twisting about due to the distortions, not a single ripple of power could be detected from it. The only difference was that the stars on the robe began to shine in an incredibly clear manner, giving off a dazzling feel.

After a moment, one of the nine old men said flatly in a hoarse voice, "Everything is normal."

A hint of excitement that could not be concealed appeared on Dao Kong's face. His heart was filled with exhilaration. The appearance of this robe in the auction hall was good and bad for him. However, now that he had bought it, the cons of it no longer existed. Instead, the benefits that would come with it would be magnified endlessly.

'If I bring this robe back to Morning Dao Sect, I will perform a great meritorious deed!' A faint smile appeared on Dao Kong's face. He lifted his right hand and seized the Sacred Constellation Robe.

'Now let's have a look as to which direct descendant this robe belonged to!'

Dao Kong was a cautious person, which was why even after he had bought the Sacred Constellation Robe and even the woman had investigated it, he still had the nine seniors he trusted the most to work together and check it.

Each of these nine people had outstanding power, and when they were together, they could allow Dao Kong to ignore plenty of dangers. In fact, he just needed one single thought, and the three thousand fearless warriors would arrive in this place in the blink of an eye.

There was nothing he should be afraid of, and he did not believe that there was anything that could cause him danger, unless the threat was from... a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death. However, he did not believe that the powerful Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death would personally come and cause trouble for him.

That was why before he touched the Sacred Constellation Robe with his hands, the smile on his face grew wider. However, at the instant he touched the Sacred Constellation Robe with his hand, the nine old men's bodies suddenly shuddered.

"Let go of it!" the nine shouted at the same time and even stood up instantly. A vast presence spread out violently from their bodies with a bang, shaking the room like how a mountain would when a terrifying earthquake struck it.

Behind Dao Kong, an indistinct figure of a woman walked out from the air and lifted her hand to seize that Sacred Constellation Robe.

But... even she was too late!

In fact, Dao Kong had not even managed to register what was going on. Once he touched the Sacred Constellation Robe, a boom rang out in his mind, and his vision blurred. A power of relocation swiftly spread out from that Sacred Constellation Robe, sweeping up his body and disappearing without a trace in the blink of an eye.

His expression changed swiftly. Without any hesitation, before his vision cleared, he thought to send a divine thought to have the three thousand fearless warriors arrive, but at the instant he was to do this, a powerful force rushed straight into his mind with a

bang. Under that impact, a roar traveled through Dao Kong's mind, and it went blank for a short period of time.

He could only vaguely see that he had been relocated to an unfamiliar place. There were a dozen something people sitting around in the room, and their presences radiated mighty waves of pressure that trapped him completely in his spot, like a gigantic net.

The final thing he saw was a calm face. It did not belong to an old man, but someone young, and his appearance seemed rather familiar to Dao Kong. This person was looking at him, and the profound gaze in his eyes looked as if it contained the endless universe and could cause a person to instantly be lost within it.

He saw the young man lifting his right hand and placing it at the top of his skull. After that... Dao Kong's world turned black.

Su Ming had an indifferent expression on his face as he placed his right hand at the top of Dao Kong's skull. At the instant his hand landed, he closed his eyes. His soul instantly left his body and charged into Dao Kong's body.

Dao Kong started trembling viciously. His expression distorted, and red filled his eyes. However, there was an unfocused look within them. Yet from his expression, it could be seen that the pain he went through at that moment was definitely nothing common.

Yu Rou and the Duke of Crimson Flame who guarded the door of the room turned their heads back to look at Su Ming and Dao Kong. The Duke of Crimson Flame did not react much, but there was still a hint of surprise in his eyes. However, once Yu Rou saw Su Ming's actions, her expression immediately changed.

She had been trying to guess Su Ming's goal all along. After all, killing Dao Kong here was easy, but the problems that would come afterwards would be numerous. Yet only then did she realize that Su Ming's goal all along was not to kill Dao Kong... but to Possess him!

Compared to her, the thirteen Progenitors from the Yu Family beside Dao Kong were much calmer. In their hearts, Su Ming was their ancestor, their god, and they would question neither his orders nor his actions. Instead, they would follow them at all costs.

The silence and bizarre situation in Su Ming's room became a stark contrast to the area outside. Almost the instant Dao Kong was relocated to Su Ming's room, a loud bang swept outwards from Dao Kong's room with an intensity of a windstorm.

As that loud bang reverberated in the air, nine figures rushed out madly. Needless to say, these nine people were the nine old men with their eyes shut. At the instant they rushed out, they opened their eyes at the same time.

Right then, it could be seen that they had no pupils in their eyes; there was only white there. However, that white was not pale white, but was instead... a white hue that looked like the color of bone.

Booming sounds rang out everywhere. As they echoed thunderously, the nine people rushed into each of the rooms within the auction hall like nine livid dragons. Wherever they went, they would start searching in a frenzy, without caring for anything else.

They could sense that Dao Kong was not relocated far away... but was nearby!

"What are you doing?!"

"Enemy attack!"

"They're people from True Morning Dao World!"

Furious roars immediately came from the rooms within the auction hall as the nine people barged into them. As the booming sounds echoed in the air, the nine old men activated all their power and used the powerful force that belonged to those in the later stage of World Plane Realm on every single person they saw.

Right behind those nine people was a woman in a purple robe. She walked out from space with her long hair dancing in the air, and her beauty could rival that of Yu Rou's.

"He's over there!" Her voice was cold and aloof. After a purple light shone in her eyes for seven consecutive times, she pointed towards a room in the distance, and that room was precisely where Su Ming was located.

She could find Dao Kong because when her hand was given to Dao Kong, her life had been bound to his by Morning Dao Sect and Phoenix Sect, which was why she could find him in such a short period of time.

Once she said those words, the nine old men whose eyes were shining with white light lifted their heads and glared at the room at which Xu Hui had pointed. Then, with their full speed, they sliced through the air and charged towards that room.

There was another woman who moved with the nine old men to rush towards that room. In fact, she was even slightly faster than them. That woman was not Xu Hui, but the young married woman. She looked as if she had turned into a cat with sharp claws that were three inches long, and she was so quick that she closed in on the door to the room within an instant.

Xu Hui's eyes were freezing cold. With a single move, the illusion of a bright moon manifested behind her. She was... already in Lunar Kalpa Realm!

"How preposterous of Black Ink Planet! How dare they scheme against True Morning Dao World in such a brazen manner!" Xu Hui moved, and murderous aura appeared about her.

Yet the instant she said these words, a cold harrumph echoed in the air.

"People of True Morning Dao World, the auction is still going, yet you are here causing trouble. You will have to offer an explanation to Black Ink Planet."

As the cold harrumph echoed in the air, a gust of wind that could destroy space itself rushed in front of Xu Hui.

At the same time, nine figures appeared in front of the nine old men. There was also an old man who had appeared in front of the woman who had turned into a cat. He lifted his palm and stopped her from moving forward.

Chapter 904: Xu Hui, I'm Fine

The thirteen old men sat cross-legged in Su Ming's room with their power completely activated. Once they gathered it up, they formed a powerful pressure that covered Dao Kong's body.

Su Ming closed his eyes, and Dao Kong, too, closed his eyes.

However, Dao Kong's body was trembling viciously. At that moment, he felt as if his mind had been turned upside down, and there were loud, booming sounds that spread throughout his mind, and they were so loud it sounded like the whole world had shattered. The echoed within his head without stop.

"Who are you?! Just who are you?!"

Dao Kong's world was an empty space with dazzling light. He stood there and roared with a hint of despair and fear, his voice spreading in all directions.

The only answer he received was a cold harrumph that came from a gigantic body.

That body was formed from Su Ming's soul. He stood in Dao Kong's mind like a god that had descended to the ground. That cold harrumph was so powerful that it could make Dao Kong's mind crumble, and it began to tremble violently.

"You do not need to know my name," Su Ming said flatly. He lifted his gigantic right hand and pushed it swiftly towards Dao Kong. With this, his palm was instantly enlarged and charged straight towards its target.

Dao Kong's face twisted with ferociousness, and a crazed look appeared on his face. If he could still not understand what was happening, then he had no right to call himself a prodigy.

"You want to Possess me! Damn it! Even if you Possess me, it'll still be difficult for you to escape death!" As Dao Kong roared, he lifted his arms. His power, his soul, and all his thoughts gathered on his palms with an intensity as if they were boiling to block Su Ming's palm pressing down on him.

A loud bang rang out, and Dao Kong's body shuddered. In his eyes, Su Ming's right hand was still growing larger, as if it planned to replace the whole world. If the other pushed his palm down, there was no way Dao Kong could dodge it. In an instant, that palm covered his body.

At the same time, an intense pain as if he was being torn apart spread through Dao Kong's soul. He felt like there was a will that was ripping apart his soul with a powerful force, and the pain only fused with it, mercilessly wiping his own will away.

This was like a phenomenon that could not be altered. All forms of power could not change this reality. Upon this realization, Dao Kong's roars became biting and shrill, his madness turning into despair.

He had seen others execute Possession before, but had never expected that he would one day have it used on him. There were no words that could be used to describe this fear. It was a despair that was numerous times more wretched and miserable than death.

"Damn it! You're the one who brought out that Sacred Constellation Robe! Your goal was to lure me into buying it. You hid a Relocation Rune in your Sacred Constellation Robe. You... You killed the owner of that Sacred Constellation Robe! Even if you Possess me, Morning Dao Sect will absolutely not let you go!" Dao Kong roared shrilly, but the palm that covered his body made him feel as if the sky and earth had pressed down on him at the same time, leaving him unable to resist. His soul was torn, and the feeling that he was being invaded and wiped away became even stronger.

He could sense it. In ten breaths at most... his soul would scatter and disappear!

"Why are you Possessing me?! If you're talking about potential, there's Ye Wang from Black Ink Planet! He has even greater potential than I do! You... Let me go! I will help you capture Ye Wang! I'll help you Possess him!

"I-I can even recommend you to become Morning Dao Sect's guest. Let me go! I-I don't want to be Possessed!" Dao Kong was almost pleading at this point.

Once his words were spoken, he could sense the mighty pressure on his body relaxing slightly. In fact, the pain from the sense of his soul being torn apart stopped intensifying, and hope immediately rose in his heart.

The moment Dao Kong felt the pressure relaxing on him, a powerful killing intent rose in his heart. Without any hesitation, he used this chance to say a few complicated and difficult words that formed a chant.

"Vandaman, stutih, sanghasah! " At the instant he said these three words, a powerful ray of light erupted from his body. That powerful light surrounded his body, and three complicated runic symbols appeared. As the powerful light swirled about violently, a vast presence spread out from the three runic symbols.

"Progenitor, save me!" Dao Kong roared furiously.

A barely noticeable cold sneer appeared at the corners of Su Ming's lips. He had been waiting for Dao Kong to use this sort of method, because he believed that with the potential he possessed, Dao Kong's position in Morning Dao Sect would definitely not be something Dao Ren could compare to. Due to that, there was a high possibility that there was a Protection Art cast by some powerful warrior on Dao Kong's body.

If it was forced out passively, then the Art would not be something he could control, and that was not part of Su Ming's plan, which was why Su Ming had intentionally lessened the pressure on the palm. Because of it, Dao Kong, who had been forced into despair, would definitely seize the chance and activate that Life Protection Art.

This would allow Su Ming to have time to seize control over that Life Protection Art which he could not originally control. Once that happened, he could complete the most crucial part of his plan to Possess Dao Kong, which was how to make the people from Morning Dao Sect believe that the future Dao Kong who would appear before them would be the real Dao Kong.

"I don't even need fifteen breaths to Possess you." Su Ming smiled coldly. At the instant power burst forth from the three runic symbols, he pounced on Dao Kong.

This scene made it seem as if Su Ming's gigantic body had turned into fog and surged into Dao Kong's body, clashing against the strong light and the runic symbols in the process.

Loud booming sounds echoed continuously in Dao Kong's mind. Su Ming's body looked as if he had been forcefully wiped off by the strong light, and he was swiftly disappearing.

At the instant his body completely disappeared, the terrified expression on Dao Kong's face froze for an instant. However, it disappeared soon. His face was still twisted, there was still fear lingering in his body, but there was a difference in the depths of his eyes

that no one could notice. That difference turned the cold, sinister look in Dao Kong's eyes into a profound look.

Dao Kong lifted his head and roared, "Damn it, you want to Possess me?! No one can Possess me!"

The world where he was immediately distorted, and his body was covered by a vortex. Once it covered him completely, he disappeared without a trace.

.....

Outside Su Ming's room was Lie Shan Family and the people from Morning Dao Sect, and they were fighting against each other.

"The actions you took while Black Ink Auction is still going are against the rules of Black Ink Planet. Even if you are from True Morning Dao World, you are not allowed to be so preposterous!" an old voice said languidly from the wind that could destroy space in front of Xu Hui.

Elder Feng's ancient body manifested from the air. When he swung his arm, Xu Hui's expression changed, and she took several swift steps back, and her pupils shrank.

She was not the only one retreating, though. The nine old men who were beside Dao Kong and who had now opened their eyes moved back in unison as well. Each time their feet landed on the ground, it would tremble.

The nine people who blocked the nine guards were also nine old men. They belonged to different families, but they were all from Black Ink Planet and part of Black Ink Dao!

The incredibly quick catwoman let out a piercing cry and began retreating with movements that made it seem as if her body was twisting. She retreated several dozen feet backwards, but there was still a layer of rain that surrounded her. It made her body seem obscure, somewhat vague and indistinct.

Xu Hui's pupils constricted, and she said with a cold sneer, "Interesting. Are there so many powerful warriors in Black Ink Planet so you could mobilize your forces instantly... or have you been waiting here and appeared to stop us when Dao Kong disappeared!

"Black Ink Planet, I don't care how you appeared here, but if you intend to stop us, then you will incite a full scale battle between True Morning Dao World and Black Ink Planet!

"You will also have to offer us an explanation for the disappearance of Dao Kong, a direct descendant of True Morning Dao World's Morning Dao Sect!"

Elder Feng remained calm. Based on Su Ming's request, he only needed to block these people for fifteen breaths, and the time was almost up. He cast a glance at the people from Morning Dao Sect, and let his gaze linger a little while longer on Xu Hui.

"Might I know how the direct descendant of your sect disappeared? Please explain in detail. If he had truly disappeared from Black Ink Auction, then I will naturally not stop you. Instead, I will work together with True Morning Dao World and search for that direct descendant of yours," Elder Feng said faintly while he counted the time in his heart. Fifteen breaths had passed by then. He might not know what Su Ming's plan entailed, but to ensure that no accidents happened, it could only be better if he could stall them a little longer.

"But if you can't provide the reason, then based on how you have barged into the rooms carelessly just now, True Morning Dao World will never be allowed to enter Black Ink Planet ever again."

Right when Elder Feng finished speaking, someone let out a cold harrumph from among the nine old men.

"Once you brought that Sacred Constellation Robe to our room after our young master bought it, our young master touched it, and he was immediately relocated. I will absolutely not believe it if you say this has nothing to do with Black Ink Planet!"

"Oh? Kang Jiu, go and check True Morning Dao World's room and see whether there is any ripple of power from a Relocation," Elder Feng said calmly, and beside him, Lie Shan Kang Jiu immediately lowered his head and voiced his obedience before walking towards the room where the people from Morning Dao Sect previously stayed.

The nine old men who had been beside Dao Kong had incredibly dark expressions on their faces at that moment. However, this was Black Ink Planet, and they also had nine people whose levels of cultivation were not any weaker than theirs blocking their path, which prevented them from breaking through.

Xu Hui's lips curled up into a cold sneer. She stole a glance at the room where she could sense Dao Kong's presence and suddenly moved. Her body split into four, and from different directions, she charged towards the room in which Su Ming stayed.

Elder Feng frowned. As he swung his arm, violent gusts of wind immediately howled. Just as they were about to sweep towards the four Xu Huis, she laughed coldly. The four figures moved once again, and in the blink of an eye, sixteen Xu Huis appeared in front of the crowd.

"Rush in!" they all cried out at the same time. The catwoman immediately let out a shrill meow, and her body changed completely. Her beast form took up most of her body, because of which she looked like she had turned into a real cat as she charged into the room.

The nine old men spat out a mouthful of blood together as if they were activating some sort of Forbidden Art. Their power then increased exponentially, and like nine raging dragons, they rushed towards the door.

"Eighteen Strikes from the Lake of Phoenix! You're one of the Phoenix Sect!" Elder Feng's pupils constricted.

The sixteen Xu Hui's lifted their right hands together and struck the door to Su Ming's room through the air. As booming sounds echoed in the air, the seventeenth Xu Hui appeared outside Su Ming's door as it twisted. Her appearance made it seem as if she had borne the force from the sixteen figures' strike, and once that force gathered on her body, it turned into her seventeenth strike.

With a speed those from Black Ink Planet could not stop, her palm struck the door.

Bang!

The door was shattered, and at the moment that happened, a steady voice came from the room.

"Xu Hui, I'm fine."

1. Vandaman, stutih, sanghasah: Which means prayer, praise, and togetherness. They're Sanskrit. There's no meaning to it, it's just a chant, and since I recently became addicted to Sanskrit and since it's just a chant, why not? Right? Right? It's more awesome than "Dao, cheng, and zong!" isn't it?! When I have time I am SO changing the previous chants to Sanskrit versions as well.

Chapter 905: Cultivation Base Clone

Along with the voice came a slender figure who walked out of the shattered door, and his presence had the pupils of Elder Feng and the members of the Lie Shan Family shrinking.

That person had a handsome face and looked like the world's serendipity had gathered on him and blessed his body. His black hair danced in the air, and his Sacred Constellation Robe shone with a dazzling light. As he stood there, the ethereal presence from him was powerful enough to attract the eyes of all those who saw him.

His own eyes were bright, and he had sharp, curving eyebrows that were in the shape of mountains. As he stood there, it looked like all the light around him had become dim so that he would become the focus of all attention.

He was a person who stole all serendipities in the world, who enjoyed the kismet from the universe - Dao Kong!

Xu Hui frowned and took several steps back, her sixteen figures dispersing. The nine old men swiftly went forward and surrounded Dao Kong like guards to protect him. The concern on their faces was incredibly clear.

"This is just a misunderstanding. I hope that the families of Black Ink Planet will not mind." Dao Kong smiled faintly and wrapped his fist in his palm, then bowed slightly to Elder Feng and the others.

A barely noticeable glint appeared in Elder Feng's eyes, and he moved his gaze from Dao Kong's body to the room in which Su Ming stayed. In the room, he saw Yu Rou, the thirteen old men, and also Su Ming, who was sitting cross-legged on the floor with a calm gaze.

"Fellow Daoist Su had a secret he wanted to discuss with me, which was why he had laid out this plan and Relocated me to his place. We have finished speaking now. Please do not blame fellow Daoist Su for this," Dao Kong said, still smiling faintly.

Su Ming also smiled, and a hint of regret appeared on his face as he looked towards Elder Feng, the nine old men beside Dao Kong, and also Xu Hui.

Xu Hui stared at Dao Kong. If it was not because she did not sense a single change within his presence, she would have definitely suspected that there was something wrong with this matter. However, the feeling she had in her soul was as usual at that moment, even if she thought that there was something off about this.

But she could not pinpoint it. With a glint in her eyes, she disappeared quietly into the air.

Elder Feng cast a profound look at Dao Kong, then said flatly, "Since it is a misunderstanding, then fellow Daoists from True Morning Dao World, please return to your rooms. The auction is still in progress. Now, pardon me."

"My subordinates have been rude just now, do forgive us." Dao Kong remained elegant and refined. When he wrapped his fist in his palm, an expression of regret also appeared on his face. It was one suited for his status and also one that conformed to the feeling he usually gave to others. As he spoke, he turned around and cast Su Ming a look. Once he smiled and nodded towards him, he strode towards his room.

The nine old men cast hostile looks at the Lie Shan Family and left while trailing behind Dao Kong.

When they left, Elder Feng frowned and cast a glance at Su Ming once again. After a brief period of silence, he turned around and led the members of the Lie Shan Family

away. As for Elder Yu, he had already disappeared into the air and was now nowhere to be seen.

The thirteen old men's faces were apathetic as they remained in Su Ming's room. They would not think about anything that was related to their progenitor. In their minds, they only needed to obey his orders.

But it was not so for Yu Rou. She looked at Su Ming with a complicated expression on her face. She had a vague guess in her heart, but it seemed rather inconceivable to her.

'This should not be a Possession; otherwise, how could that Dao Kong still have his intelligence intact. Su Ming also has his intelligence intact. Besides, judging by how the people from Morning Dao Sect reacted and were able to find this place immediately, it can only mean that there is someone among them who has a close connection to Dao Kong, so if he was Possessed, then that connection would definitely be broken...

'However, based on their reactions just now, it seems like... that connection is still around?

'But if it wasn't a Possession, then what was it...?' As Yu Rou thought about it, a deep wariness appeared in her eyes as she looked at Su Ming. He had become even more unfathomable in her mind.

"Let's go. There's no need for us to linger around here anymore." Su Ming stood up, and when he spoke flatly, he walked out. Yu Rou followed behind him. As for the thirteen old men, they bowed respectfully and disappeared into their rooms to act as garrisons for the auction.

"Prepare a chamber for me. I want to enter isolation." When he walked out of the room, Su Ming spoke in a calm manner, and Yu Rou lowered her head to voice her obedience.

After a moment, Su Ming sat down cross-legged in a chamber deep underground within Black Water City. It was quiet all around him. He had his eyes open, and his expression was calm. Not a single hint of emotion was revealed on his face.

He seemed to be waiting for something. When the time it takes for an incense stick to burn passed, a light breeze seemed to blow in the chamber, and Su Ming looked over.

Elder Feng walked out from the wind and sat down cross-legged in front of him.

"Lord God of Berserkers, please grant me an explanation," Elder Feng said hoarsely.

Su Ming did not speak. Instead, he lifted his right hand. Freezing air slowly appeared in the air above it, followed soon by snow manifesting itself above his palm. This was not

an illusion. This was snow brought about by the cold of Midwinter's Chill, which was part of Su Ming's Life Matrix.

The few flakes of snow that appeared on Su Ming's palm floated down to the ground from his palm, and gradually, a layer of snow covered the area around him.

"Elder Feng, what did you see?" Su Ming asked languidly.

"Snow." Elder Feng frowned slightly.

Su Ming furled his right hand into a fist, and once he seized the snow floating down, he unfurled his palm to reveal the snowflakes which had not melted in his palm.

"What is this?"

"Snow," Elder Feng answered faintly.

Su Ming smiled. He flicked his wrist, and once he flung off the snow, he seized the layer of snow around him with a gentle grip.

"And what is this?"

"It is still snow." Elder Feng narrowed his eyes, as if he had come to an understanding.

"I have already provided you with an explanation." Su Ming swung his arm, and all the snow around him disappeared "I want to enter isolation now, and I will head to Divine Essence Star Ocean after that Once we part ways, I do not know when we will meet each other again. Elder Feng... please take care of yourself." Su Ming smiled and slowly closed his eyes.

Elder Feng remained silent for a moment, then shook his head and smiled. He got up and bowed to Su Ming before turning around, shaking his head, and leaving.

He understood now. Su Ming had indeed provided him with an explanation. As for the details, they would differ for each person.

When Su Ming entered isolation, the auction continued in the world outside and Dao Kong sat on the soft chair in his room as usual. In his hand was a wine cup, and as he watched the auction on the screen of light, he sipped at the wine.

The nine old men sat behind him, and all of them had their eyes shut, covering the white light that had shone within them when they had flown off in a rage earlier.

The beautiful woman was no longer in the form of a catwoman, but had turned into the shape of a delicate beauty. She knelt down beside Dao Kong as if she was terrified of him, and in her hands she held a pot of wine, occasionally filling up Dao Kong's cup.

"I need an explanation!" Xu Hui stated gloomily.

"Oh? What explanation do you need?"

When Dao Kong asked this in a light tone, a barely noticeable glint shone in his eyes, and he looked towards the woman by his side. Ever since she had entered the room with him, she had immediately put on this delicate appearance. The fear in her was not fake. She was truly afraid of him.

"That Relocation from the Sacred Constellation Robe. What happened when you were Relocated?" Xu Hui demanded again in a gloomy voice.

"Fellow Daoist Su from Black Ink Planet had a deal he wanted to form with me, and since it was not convenient for him to come to me directly, he used this method..." Dao Kong said languidly, but the moment those words left his lips, he immediately noticed the woman by his side freezing for a moment, then lifting her head to cast him a surprised glance.

In fact, some of the nine old men behind him also lifted their chins slightly.

Ripples immediately appeared from the space in front of him, and Xu Hui walked out from those ripples with a single step. She glared at Dao Kong, and hints of murderous aura as well as something strange appeared in her eyes.

"... because only with this method could he hold a secret talk with me," Dao Kong said flatly, his eyes narrowing slightly.

"Oh? What secret talk could that be?" Xu Hui asked once again.

"What secret talk...?"

Dao Kong lifted his head slightly, and a smile appeared on his face. He loosened his grip over the cup, and the cup in his hand plunged down, but before it fell, the woman by his side extended her hand to grab it. When Dao Kong saw this scene, the smile on his face grew wider. His right hand fell on the woman's face, and when he caressed it gently, the woman lowered her head. The surprise that appeared on her face previously also disappeared, replaced by obedience.

The couple old men behind him who had lifted their heads lowered them when they saw this scene.

In fact, even the focused glint in Xu Hui's eyes became different. She might look as she usually did, but the doubt in her heart had lessened due to Dao Kong's actions.

"Why should I tell you?" The ghost of a smile appeared on Dao Kong's face as his expression turned cold and he looked towards Xu Hui.

Xu Hui frowned. She greatly detested this sort of expression and tone Dao Kong used, but it was precisely this expression and tone that caused most of the doubt in her heart to disappear. With a cold harrumph, she fused into the air once again and disappeared.

Once Xu Hui disappeared, Dao Kong's gaze landed on the screen of light, the ghost of a smile still on his face; he was calm deep down in his heart.

He was not Dao Kong!

He was Su Ming!

Dao Kong's soul and mind had been Possessed by Su Ming. However, he would need some time to completely digest Dao Kong's memories, but it would not take too long. One month was enough.

At the moment Su Ming successfully Possessed Dao Kong, he could clearly sense how greatly Dao Kong's potential surpassed his, and more importantly, he could also vaguely sense the kismet gathered in Dao Kong's body.

This was the kismet of True Morning Dao World. With it around, this cultivation base clone could possess limitless growth.

'As the kismet on Ye Wang's body slowly disappears and eventually leaves him completely, this cultivation base clone of mine will have most of True Morning Dao World's kismet gather on him and because of that, this clone's potential... will reach an incredibly powerful state.

'Besides... my current status is that of Morning Dao Sect's direct descendant. Morning Dao Sect... I wonder how the grudge between us will erupt when I become the only young master in Morning Dao Sect in the future.'

Su Ming smiled. That smile was incredibly brilliant, but there was an incredibly strange and sinister feeling to it.

When the woman by his side saw that smile, her heart trembled, and she quickly lowered her head, simply allowing Su Ming to keep his right hand on her face, gently brushing her skin.

"This auction is boring and dull. Notify the warships in the galaxy. I want to leave by tomorrow," he said flatly as a glint appeared in his eyes.

Chapter 906: I Only Want 999...

With Dao Kong's status, once he left Black Ink Planet, he would return straight to the galaxy where the forces of power from the four Great True Worlds were stationed. Through that place, he could return to True Morning Dao World, but should he...? He was not really in a hurry to leave. He could also head to Divine Essence Star Ocean.

With these two as options, Su Ming would naturally choose the latter.

Even if he really wanted to return immediately to True Morning Dao World... his Ecang clone still required a large amount of Divine Essence to grow stronger and devour the other nine Ecang souls, and the best place to obtain Divine Essence was naturally the mysterious and enigmatic Divine Essence Star Ocean.

After all, that was the place where numerous Gods died or fell asleep. That's why the Divine Essence Su Ming needed was in that place.

Also, he had sensed Lie Shan Xiu's cry for help, and there was no way Su Ming could just ignore it... He chose to search for Lie Shan Xiu's tracks and do his best to try and find clues about him.

If in the end, he was truly unable to find him, then even if he had to leave, Su Ming would have no regrets.

However, he did not intend to publicly have his clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole perform this task and instead chose to have Dao Kong's body, his cultivation base clone, perform the task.

After all, this clone had three thousand fearless warriors, nine old men in the later stage of World Plane Realm, a woman with an astonishing speed, a woman in Lunar Kalpa Realm from Phoenix Sect who hid herself around him, and a dozen something galactic warships. This power was much stronger than what Su Ming's clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole possessed and would allow him to protect himself in Divine Essence Star Ocean.

Besides, with Su Ming's own power, he could explore even deeper areas of Divine Essence Star Ocean and head to regions where few people could enter on normal occasions.

With this thought in mind, Su Ming walked out of the room in the auction hall, bringing with him the nine old men with shut eyes and the catwoman. They returned to True Morning Dao World's lodgings.

Su Ming chose a meditation room in that place and sent away the nine old men as well as the woman. He sat down quietly and meditated. Everything was silent around him. Once he sat down, the Divine Essence Runic Symbols shone in his eyes, and the Sacred Constellation Robe on his body immediately lit up. The runic symbols rose and

fell, looking like they had always existed on the robe and making it hard for others to tell which light was a runic symbol and which a star.

Soon after, with Su Ming as the center, the power of Divine Essence erupted from the Star Constellation Robe.

This power swept outwards in all directions, and in an instant, it filled the entire chamber. If anyone looked over, they would be able to notice that there were endless waves contained within the chamber, making it look like the bottom of the ocean. The waves surrounded him layer by layer, looking like ripples on the surface of water.

This was not the power from the Star Constellation Robe, but Divine Essence that existed within Su Ming's soul, and he was just using the Star Constellation Robe as a cover. Very little time had passed since Su Ming Possessed Dao Kong, so he hadn't had the time to examine the Star Constellation Robe's effects, but he knew that it could be used to hide the power of Divine Essence.

A soft gasp of surprise came from a corner of the chamber as those waves spread out. Xu Hui's body was forced out of the air, and her expression changed. Shock appeared in her eyes as she stared at the Star Constellation Robe on Su Ming's body. This was the first time she saw Morning Dao Sect's Star Constellation Robe possessing such a well-hidden skill.

However, she was only astonished. After all, the mysteries of the Star Constellation Robe were something that even she did not completely understand, and she was from Phoenix Sect. In her eyes, this was definitely the members of the older generation from Morning Dao Sect showing favor to Dao Kong and executing a Protection Art for him.

"We're in a chamber, and you and I are alone. Could it be that you intend to practice dual cultivation with me right now? If that's the case, then I'll welcome it with open arms," Su Ming said in a lackadaisical manner, but there was a sinister tone in his words along with his flippancy.

Xu Hui let out a cold harrumph, and disgust appeared on her face, as usual. The only person who could say such words was Dao Kong, whom she was sick of. His sentence just then made quite a large amount of doubt in her heart to disappear once again. There was only a small hint of it left in her. After all, the feeling she obtained from the connection she had in her soul was still the same as ever. As she let out a cold harrumph, she disappeared once again and left the chamber.

Once she was gone, the waves in the chamber continued spreading outwards. When the time it takes for an incense stick to burn passed, the lackadaisical look on Su Ming's face disappeared, replaced by calmness. He waited for another moment before he lifted his right hand and pushed his palm before himself.

Immediately, light spread out from the edges of his palm and the spot where his palm had landed. There was a relaxed look on Su Ming's face, and when he lifted his right hand slowly, a Relocation Rune appeared in front of him.

This Rune... had existed within this chamber a long time ago. To be more precise, it had been there even before the people from Morning Dao Sect had appeared in Black Ink Planet, but it had been hidden incredibly well, and even Xu Hui had not noticed it.

Deep underground in another region of Black Water City was another chamber. There, Su Ming's clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole opened his eyes as he remained seated. Once he did that, the light from a Rune spread out from his body. That light grew increasingly stronger, and in the span of a breath, it completely enveloped this clone.

Three breaths later, Su Ming's clone disappeared without a trace.

At the same time, in the chamber where Su Ming's cultivation base clone was, his clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole appeared and gained form before he walked out with a single step.

This clone of his did not stop when his foot landed. Instead, he took another step, and in an instant, crashed into Su Ming's cultivation base clone, and they... started overlapping, as if they were fusing together.

If anyone looked over, they would be able to tell clearly that the clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole and the cultivation base clone did not exist in the same dimension. It was as if one had stepped through the other as he sat down cross-legged as well.

The place where the clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole sat down was naturally the place where Su Ming's cultivation base clone sat. At that instant, the two of them completely overlapped with each other.

At the moment that happened, distortions appeared in the air. After the time it takes for half an incense stick to burn, the distortions died down. When everything within the chamber returned to normal, the overlapping shadow about Su Ming's body disappeared without a trace.

He still appeared as Dao Kong, but at that moment, if he brought out all his offensive abilities, then he would be much stronger than Dao Kong.

Su Ming smiled faintly, lifted his right hand, and swung it at the ground. The Relocation Rune started cracking inch by inch until it was completely wiped off and disappeared.

"Once we return to the galactic warship and head to Divine Essence Star Ocean, I will raise the level of cultivation of this cultivation base clone of mine to the highest possible

limit of what he can endure," Su Ming mumbled, and a brilliant light shone in his eyes. He had been waiting for this day for far too long. The increase in his level of cultivation for his cultivation base was his foundation, and it was the true divine ability that was stronger than physical strength.

"God Ascension Nectar, it's finally time for me to use it..." Su Ming touched his storage bag. As his clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole fused with him, a number of storage bags on his body had increased.

As for Dao Kong's storage bag, Su Ming had sent his Atman to scan it and seen quite a large number of good items in there. However, since he had limited time and quite a lot of things to do, he intended to investigate those items once he returned to the galactic warship. He believed that he would be able to obtain many rewards at that time.

'It's a pity that even the Lie Shan Family couldn't manage to find even a single hint about the bald crane's physical body. They've searched through everything, but found nothing.'

Su Ming went over his thoughts for a little while longer before closing his eyes and immersing himself in Dao Kong's memories. He had to master all of Dao Kong's interests and habits as soon as possible and then slowly change back to his own personality in a manner that no one would be able to notice.

The night went by quickly. When the second morning arrived, Su Ming opened his eyes, and once a strange light flickered briefly in his eyes, he stood up. With a swing of his arm, the door to the chamber slowly opened, and the nine old men with their eyes shut as well as the catwoman were all standing respectfully outside the chamber.

Su Ming did not say a single word. Once he walked out of the chamber, he turned into a long arc, and the nine old men as well as the catwoman turned into long arcs to charge with him into the sky.

Su Ming lifted his right hand in Black Ink Planet's sky. There was a ring on his index finger, and when sunlight shone on it, a brilliant light immediately spread out from it. As Su Ming sent a thought into it, the light from the ring instantly became stronger, as if it wanted to compete against the sun on who was brighter.

At the same time, booming sounds echoed in the air, and in the blink of an eye, illusory figures appeared all around Su Ming.

There were three thousand of them, not a single one more, not a single one less.

Naturally, they were Morning Dao Sect's fearless warriors, which were given to Dao Kong by Morning Dao Sect!

"Greetings, young master!" The same words and actions were repeated at the same time by all the three thousand cultivators. Their voices fused together to turn into a wave of sound that surged into the sky, stirring up a powerful presence. This presence was a murderous aura that told the world that these people would dare to rush forward and fight till the death even in the face of an old monster of Solar Kalpa Realm.

As Su Ming looked at these three thousand cultivators, a smile appeared on his face.

"Young master, the galactic warships have been activated and can leave at anytime. Young master... when do you want to board the ship?" the beautiful woman beside Su Ming said respectfully in a low tone.

"Later. For now, come with me... to Worldly Star Planet."

When Su Ming said this, he took a step towards the direction of Worldly Star Planet. The nine old men immediately followed behind him, and the three thousand cultivators turned into three thousand long arcs who charged forward.

If anyone from the ground lifted their heads to look up, they would see a sight that would give the feeling as if thousands of shooting stars were slicing through the sky. Their presences were like waves that stirred up ripples in the world, and they could be seen from far into the distance.

As these people stirred up loud whistling sounds while they moved through the air, Worldly Star Planet soon appeared in their vision. A faint smile appeared on Su Ming's lips. He could already sense the bald crane and the Abyss Dragon's presences below.

In fact, as they got closer and appeared in the sky above Worldly Star Planet, he could see a cultivator surrounded by two men in one corner of the city. Those two men were saying something in low whispers, and the sleazy looking man who was the bald crane placed its arm deep into its bosom to bring out a corner of an illustrated book, as if it wanted to let the cultivator notice it.

"Did you see it, Fellow Daoist? Do you want to know Black Ink Planet's secret? Do you want to know what sort of organization is Black Ink Dao? Heh heh, I have everything here.

"Are you interested in it? Are you interested in the Progenitor of Yu Family's private life? Do you want to know the true identity of the Dual Fiends: the Crane and the Black? Do you want to see the private pictures of the mysterious, beautiful woman who appeared in the past? I even have with me the list of the Hua Family's bastards as well as the truth behind Mo Family's Progenitor castrating himself while enduring pain just to increase his level of cultivation.

"In fact, I even have with me solid proof that the members of the Lie Shan Family are not attracted to the members of the opposite sex but only those of the same sex!

"Three hundred years ago, why did nearly two hundred old women from eighty different families cry at the same time? One thousand years ago, why did all the female beasts in Black Ink Planet cry and wail for three years? Three thousand years ago, why did all the male beasts in Black Ink Planet roar for ten years!

"All of this is just for ten thousand crystals. Brother, for just ten thousand crystals, this picture book will belong to you. You're lucky. Today, since today is the 300th anniversary since I opened shop, I will give a discount to the first ten buyers. It's not ten thousand crystals and neither is it eight thousand crystals, and much less than five thousand crystals...

"Instead, it's just 999 crystals! Fellow Daoist, for just 999 crystals, you can take with you all the secrets of Black Ink Planet!" The bald crane was speaking so excitedly that its spit was flying all over the place, and the cultivator was completely stunned while listening to it.

Su Ming sighed in midair, then lifted his right hand and pointed at the bald crane as well as the Abyss Dragon who was providing vocal support.

"Capture the two of them and take them with us."

Chapter 907: Rising Abruptly in Power due to Accumulated Strength

As Su Ming spoke, the nine old men had calm expressions on their faces. Clearly, the men which were the bald crane and the Abyss Dragon did not manage to stir up much of their attention in terms of their levels of cultivation.

There was not much of a change of expression on the faces of the three thousand fearless warriors behind Su Ming either. However, there was a monstrous presence within them that burst forth from their bodies within an instant. It formed a great, mighty pressure that covered the entire Worldly Star Planet, especially on the men that were the bald crane and the Abyss Dragon.

At the same time, a glint appeared in the catwoman's eyes while she was beside Su Ming. Her ears instantly became sharper, and with one move, she instantly appeared beside the two men who were the bald crane and the Abyss Dragon with a speed so quick that it made Su Ming's pupils shrink slightly.

"Don't injure them. Capture them alive." Su Ming swung his arm and turned around to walk towards the sky. The nine old men followed after him, and the three thousand fearless warriors surrounded him.

The bald crane was taken aback. It had been too immersed in its act just now and ended up not noticing such a large amount of people appearing in the sky. At that

moment, it was shocked by the mighty pressure, and when it lifted its head, immediately let out a loud screech.

Su Ming did not turn his head back to look. The bald crane should be taught a lesson, which was why Su Ming charged towards the sky with a relaxed expression while being surrounded by the people. When he flew out of the highest layer of wind in Black Ink Planet, he stood in the galaxy and saw the thirteen gigantic warships.

From the distance, these thirteen warships looked ferocious. They were entirely black, and there was a ghastly air coming from them. At the bow of the ship in the lead was a murderous aura. That murderous aura was gathered there and did not dissipate, but once it spread out, it would form a power that could destroy the world.

Each of the galactic warships from True Morning Dao World were incredibly precious. They were control Morning Dao Sect's control, and were gigantic Enchanted Vessels that could travel at the same speed as the ancient bronze swords from True Sacred Yin World.

Almost at the instant Su Ming saw the thirteen warships, hundreds of people immediately flew out together from the warships. There were men and women among them, and their expressions were all respectful as they wrapped their fists in their palms and bowed towards Su Ming.

"Welcome back, young master."

Su Ming smiled faintly. He did not speak, but took a huge step forward. When he was near the ships, he swept his gaze across them, and then, his eyes were fixed on the biggest ship among the thirteen. He walked towards it.

At the instant he stepped on the warship, the nine old men followed after him. As for the three thousand fearless warriors, they split up and went to the remaining warships.

On this warship that originally belonged to Dao Kong, Su Ming closed his eyes. He spread his divine sense to cover the entire warship, and after some time, he formed a conclusion based on Dao Kong's memories and gained an objective understanding of the warship.

At that moment, shrill cries travelled from the distance and became increasingly closer with each passing moment. Within the blink of an eye, those shrill cries echoed in the warship where Su Ming currently was.

"Damn it! Do you know who you've just captured?! I'm telling you, it's not good for you to offend me! How dare you capture me?! You're dead now! Just you wait!!"

"Little boy Su will come save us!!"

Su Ming opened his eyes and looked at the beautiful woman. She had a man held in each of her hands. When she arrived on the warship, she let go of the bald crane and the Abyss Dragon, then stood beside Su Ming with her head lowered and with respect on her face.

"I'm telling you, your Grandpa Crane is seriously powerful! Y-y-you... Just you wait! Before long, you will all pay!" The bald crane bared its teeth and brandished its claws while speaking in a biting tone, but Su Ming, who was familiar with its actions, could tell that the bald crane was afraid.

The Abyss Dragon was silent beside it.

"If you know your place, then hurry up and send us back to Black Ink Planet, or else... heh heh, even if you're from True Morning Dao World, you won't be able to withstand little boy Su's fury!" The bald crane spoke once again with a shrill voice. It was currently incredibly frightened, and when it saw the cultivators around it all maintaining those aloof looks on their faces and were completely indifferent no matter how it threatened them, its heart began to tremble.

It would occasionally size up the handsome young man's face in front of it, and a myriad of thoughts raced in its head.

'Damn it, this person wasn't among the list of people I tricked in the past.'

'Why did he capture me? Could it be... Could it be that he's little boy Su's enemy? Ah... Su Ming, o Su Ming, you really brought a disaster on my head.' The bald crane did not have enough confidence its guess, but it still shouted loudly, as if it had a powerful background.

Su Ming smiled faintly. He looked at the bald crane continue making noise in front of him, then lifted his right hand slowly to swipe his palm across his storage bag gently, and immediately, a crystal appeared on his palm.

He threw the crystal on the ground.

The sound of the clear crystal falling on the ground was barely unnoticeable amid the bald crane's screeches... but almost at the instant the sound appeared, the bald crane's voice immediately died down, and its eyes were instantly fixed on the crystal. Then, it instinctively pounced on the crystal, and it was so fast that within an instant, it had already seized the crystal in its hand.

It also placed the crystal in its mouth and bit into it. Excitement and exhilaration appeared on its face.

"I lack two attendants by my side," Su Ming said flatly.

The bald crane immediately put away the crystal and looked at Su Ming before it struck its chest and spoke loudly.

"I-I'm-I'm willing to become your attendant, but you have to give me one crystal per day!" As it shouted, it even kicked the Abyss Dragon before it looked at Su Ming again.

"With him along, you have to give us two crystals per day!"

"Baldy!!" The man who was the Abyss Dragon glared at the bald crane. Just as it was about to speak, it was once again kicked twice by the bald crane. It was stunned. Being kicked twice was a signal they had formed between themselves.

The Abyss Dragon let out a harrumph and did not speak any longer.

"Alright, the two of you may leave now. Notify the other warships. We'll be heading... to Divine Essence Star Ocean." A glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes. He said these words flatly and sat down cross-legged on the ship.

Su Ming's orders was a supreme, mighty pressure on the thirteen warships. As his voice travelled outwards, whistling sounds immediately shot forth from the thirteen warships after a moment before they changed their direction and moved past Black Ink Planet swiftly to head straight towards... Divine Essence Star Ocean, which was behind Black Ink Planet.

Even Xu Hui did not question Su Ming after a moment of hesitation. She did was not certain as to what exactly were Dao Kong's missions in Black Ink Planet. He thought that heading to Divine Essence Star Ocean was also one of Dao Kong's missions.

The thirteen warships heading out together in the galaxy. Waves were stirred up, and wherever they went, the galaxy would look like the surface of water, and ripples would appear.

Su Ming had his eyes shut as he remained seated with his legs crossed. He lifted his right hand and formed a seal before pushing his palm on the ship. An illusory screen of light immediately appeared around him. That screen of light spread outwards and fused with the air above him, forming an empty space with Su Ming at its center.

This was an Art possessed by the galactic warship. It could form a secret chamber that others would find difficult to enter. Only the master of the warships could do this, and since Su Ming Possessed Dao Kong, he could naturally do so.

He was the only one alone in the secret chamber, and all other people had been sent away. Even Xu Hui could not enter the secret chamber on the warship without a sound.

This was an area that offered absolute safety to Su Ming.

'With the bald crane's intelligence, it should have registered what is going on. There's no need for me to remind it, then.' As Su Ming's eyes closed and opened his eyes, a brilliant light shone briefly within them.

'Right now, the most important thing is for me to increase my level of cultivation.' A hint of anticipation appeared in Su Ming's eyes. He took a deep breath, and at the instant his eyes slowly fell shut, he immediately circulating his cultivation base.

Once he Possessed Dao Kong, Dao Kong's original cultivation base which existed in the body also became an illusion and no longer possessed corporeal form. Instead, as Dao Kong died, it also started dissipating.

In truth, Su Ming's level of cultivation still remained at Heaven Cultivation Realm.

However, with Dao Kong's potential and with the energy Su Ming had stored over the years, he had confidence that he could easily reach World Plane Realm.

Almost at the instant Su Ming closed his eyes and as if his cultivation base circulated with a bang, Su Ming's Ecang clone opened his eyes in Western Ring Nebula's foreign land. Waves of Divine Essence appeared on the Ecang clone, as if there was a connection between him and Su Ming's cultivation base clone even though they were separated by an immeasurable distance.

'To move to World Plane Realm, I will need to obtain the acknowledgement from a world and use the power of World Plane contained in that world to let me head into World Plane Realm.

'I don't have the chance to have a world to acknowledge me... but I don't need the other worlds' acknowledgement either. I have... my own Ecang world.

'Previously, due to the limits of my potential, I could not become a cultivator in World Plane Realm even after a long time had passed. But now, the limit due to my potential is no longer around, and I... will step into World Plane Realm!' A brilliant light shone in Su Ming's eyes. He formed a seal and placed his hands on his knees. Once he sucked in a deep breath, he slowly closed his eyes.

At the instant he closed his eyes, the Ecang world where his Ecang clone was instantly bubble with excitement. The power of Divine Essence filled the worlds, and since Su Ming had originally left a Brand of his soul in the place, almost within an instant, dense waves of World Plane power were separated from the Divine Essence in those one hundred thousand worlds.

The Brand from Su Ming's soul was contained in this World Plane power. As they bubbled with excitement, they stirred up the presence within Su Ming's cultivation base clone, causing Su Ming, who had his eyes shut in the warship, to have his level of cultivation increase exponentially with a bang.

Bang!

Intense bangs echoed in Su Ming's head. That was the impact from a cultivator from Heaven Cultivation Realm trying to reach World Plane Realm. Just one impact alone was enough to cause Su Ming's body to tremble viciously. Within an instant, his cultivation base within him increased by several times its original amount, and from the peak of Heaven Cultivation Realm, he moved swiftly into the initial stage of World Plane Realm.

Once he entered World Plane Realm, Su Ming's Atman instantly grew several times in size. A feeling as if he had been enlightened and as if he could somewhat fuse with the galaxy immediately appeared in Su Ming's heart.

This feeling was something he had never experienced before. Right then, as it appeared for the first time, he could not help but be immersed in it.

"I have finally... reached a breakthrough and headed into World Plane Realm," Su Ming mumbled. His physical body might be incredibly strong and his Ecang clone might be far stronger than the clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole, but due to his potential, his cultivation base could not hope to compare to them.

Yet now, he could sense the power of World Plane Realm. In fact, he sensed that as his power increased, his soul also seemed to be largely different from before.

"I should be able to continue increasing my power." Su Ming opened his eyes slightly. The profound look in his eyes made him seem as if the universe was contained within them. He mumbled softly and circulated his cultivation base once again to stir up the worlds where his Ecang clone was located. As his cultivation base circulated repeatedly within him, he attempted to reach the middle stage of World Plane Realm.

Rising abruptly in power due to accumulated strength. At that moment, this phrase was an apt description for Su Ming.

Chapter 908: God Ascension Nectar!

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

Due to the screen of light covering the warship, all the ripples formed by the impact from Su Ming's cultivation base were blocked. Not a single hint of his presence spread out, so no one could know what was happening to him.

Everything was normal.

The bald crane and the Abyss Dragon walked with a swagger on the warship, especially the bald crane. It had a provocative look in its eyes, and it would occasionally sweep its gaze arrogantly past some of the cultivators who were meditating around.

Perhaps it was tiring for it to do such a thing for a prolonged period of time, but it returned to its own room in the warship in an hour. When they were both back in their room, the Abyss Dragon stared at the bald crane. It had too many things it did not understand and was waiting for the bald crane to offer up an explanation to it.

“Just what is going on?” the Abyss Dragon asked in a low voice.

“Y-y-you... Seriously, you still don’t understand?” The bald crane yawned, then cast a sideways glance at the Abyss Dragon as it sighed.

The man who was the Abyss Dragon frowned. He did not speak.

“It’s a simple matter. We ran into a rich person, and he values me highly, so he used a great sum of money to invite me to become his attendant. You gained a profit as well since you’re with me. It’s that simple.” The bald crane winked.

“This is... But what about Su Ming?” The Abyss Dragon was momentarily stunned. After a moment of hesitation, he looked at the bald crane.

“Ignore him. That person is too stingy. Look at how great our new boss is. He gave us a crystal right at the moment he met us, so we’ll definitely have a bright future free of worries ahead of us if we follow him. We can even return to True Morning Dao World, isn’t that great? You can also find that young mistress of yours soon.” The bald crane cackled.

The Abyss Dragon hesitated again. It felt that such an act did not seem too good...

“Enough already. When have you ever suffered a loss since you joined me? Don’t worry about it too much, once we’re back in True Morning Dao World, I’ll go with you to the Emperor of Abyss’ True World. At that time, don’t forget about the crystals you promised me.” The bald crane yawned and sprawled down on the ground. It had taken the form of a human at that moment, but with this shape, no matter how it lay on the ground, it looked as if it was a dead dog.

The Abyss Dragon sighed and no longer spoke, but instead lay down in a corner. It also... looked like a big yellow dog.

When the Abyss Dragon sighed, a barely noticeable glint shone in the bald crane’s eyes. The thoughts running through its head at that moment were something the Abyss Dragon could not understand with its mind.

'Heh heh, who else could it be but Su Ming who would throw a crystal at me the first time we meet?! That guy could even Possess Ecang and make the other Ecang souls unable to recognize him once he Possessed it, so Possessing a mere cultivator is easy-peasy to him. Besides, I haven't been paying attention to his soul previously, but once I look at him closely, who else could it be but Su Ming?

'Ah... As expected, I'm just so smart. It's a pity that there are far too few smart cranes in the world.'

As these thoughts flashed in the bald crane's head, an array of emotions that spoke of a feeling of arrogance and loneliness which made it feel as if it stood on the tallest peak and dwarfed all other existences appeared on its face.

The thirteen warships charged through the galaxy as days passed. In the blink of an eye, half a month went by.

They were already far away from Black Ink Planet. The spot in which they were currently located was very close to the periphery of Divine Essence Star Ocean. On their trip to the place, not a single faction of power dared show any form of ill-will towards them.

Usually, any cultivator who saw them would immediately avoid them and not dare to provoke them.

In fact, the small planets and small factions of power between Black Ink Planet and Divine Essence Star Ocean simply allowed the thirteen warships to pass by once they detected them.

If it was not the thirteen warships but Su Ming alone, then before he even reached the periphery of Divine Essence Star Ocean, he might have already been halted in his path a few times.

In this place, killing a person and stealing their things was something natural. There were countless cases of the weak being abused by the strong. Without a sufficient amount of power, no one would dare to head to Divine Essence Star Ocean.

Due to this law of survival, there were plenty of rogue cultivators who were like bandits in this region. They all lurked around with covetous eyes and would swarm towards all prey they believed they could steal from without any hesitation.

However, in the face of the thirteen awe-inspiring warships, all the factions of power did not dare provoke them.

Su Ming did not know all of this. During the past dozen something days, he had been immersed in increasing his level of cultivation. As he attempted breakthrough after breakthrough, he had reached the peak of the initial stage of World Plane Realm using

the power of World Planes from Ecang's worlds. With just one more step, he could head into the middle stage of World Plane Realm.

However, this one step was not that easy to take. After trying several times to reach a breakthrough, Su Ming knew that even with Dao Kong's potential, he would need around one hundred years before he could reach the middle stage of World Plane Realm.

Even though Dao Kong had previously surpassed the middle stage of World Plane Realm, Su Ming had seen in his memories that while Dao Kong had reached the middle stage of World Plane Realm due to his potential, a grand ceremony called Morning Dao Pilgrimage played an even more important part in allowing him to reach that Realm.

Each of the direct descendants had a chance to go on Morning Dao Pilgrimage once when they ran into a stone wall in terms of their level of cultivation. It could be done only once, but it would give them a certain amount of certainty to break through their wall. However, the chances of success for that had a great connection to the person's potential.

Dao Kong had reached the middle stage of World Plane Realm when he reached a breakthrough during Morning Dao Pilgrimage, which he went to before he entered the Barren Lands of Divine Essence.

After another failure, Su Ming opened his eyes. A brilliant light shone within them, and after a brief period of silence, he tapped his storage bag with his right hand, and a poisonous wasp immediately appeared in his hand.

The wasp's wings fluttered slightly as it lay on Su Ming's palm.

After a thousand something years of nurture, the wasp was now incredibly close to Su Ming, and the time for him to be able to take the God Ascension Nectar from its body had arrived. Su Ming sucked in a deep breath, and a resolute look appeared in his eyes.

One thousand something years of nurture had caused Su Ming to be certain that the God Ascension Nectar was indeed within the wasp's body. However, it was difficult for him to completely extract the nectar out from the wasp. It had already fused with the wasp, and the only way to take it out...

... was by its poison!

The God Ascension Nectar was contained within the wasp's poison, and he had to control the amount of poison produced to be able to retrieve it.

Once Su Ming sent a thought to the wasp, it immediately disappeared. When it reappeared, it was already beside Su Ming's chest. The poisonous stinger turned into a chilling ray of light that stabbed forward.

If Su Ming had not nurtured and familiarized himself with the wasp, then her sting would have injected a great amount of poison into his system. Then, what awaited Su Ming would no longer be a serendipity, but danger.

Yet now, it was different. Even though the wasp had stung his body, he was in control of the wasp. It was injecting the poison along with the God Ascension Nectar in an incredibly cautious manner.

In just a moment, Su Ming's body turned purplish black. The poisonous wasp swiftly pulled out the needle and flew around him. There was a hint of anxiety within the buzzing it produced while it flew.

Su Ming's face was purplish black at that moment, and his body trembled. The wasp's poison had already filled him due to the circulation of blood, but since he controlled the amount, the poison would not be activated instantly. Instead, it would remain at an amount which he could bear.

Su Ming sucked in a deep breath and closed his eyes.

Several days later, the purplish black hue on his body slowly retreated, until all of it gathered on his right index finger, turning it pitch black. At that moment, Su Ming opened his eyes. With a fingernail, he sliced through his index finger, and black blood poured out.

When all the poisoned blood flowed out, there was no longer any poison within Su Ming, only a hint of... a golden substance that looked like honey. If he pulled at it, he could form a long thread from his wound to his finger, but that golden substance would not fuse with his blood.

That golden substance... was naturally the God Ascension Nectar!

More accurately speaking, this was just a small amount of the nectar within the wasp. However, just this small amount of nectar was enough for Su Ming to close his eyes. He activated his cultivation base and had it circulate in his body, stirring up his Qi to make the substance in his blood melt, and at that moment, a thunderous boom rang out in his head.

The loud sound replaced Su Ming's thoughts. Right then, a violent and frantic power swiftly erupted in his body.

The God Ascension Nectar was the supreme treasure Su Ming had obtained in Yin Death Region. It was given the name God Ascension because it was said that this nectar could turn a mortal into a God. It might seem like the effects had been exaggerated, but if such a legend had been circulating around, it was enough to show how great of a storm this nectar had brought to the ancient world.

God Ascension Nectar could be said to have gone extinct a long time ago in the universe, so not a single bit of it could be found in the world anymore. However, as fate would have it, some bit of that nectar... remained in a single poisonous wasp.

And that wasp had not died, but had even been saved by Su Ming!

This was a serendipity, Su Ming's serendipity.

If fact, if anyone else knew that Su Ming possessed this God Ascension Nectar, then even the four Great True Worlds would make a disaster fall on his head to snatch his poisonous wasp.

God Ascension Nectar was a supreme treasure that could make even the ferocious beasts in the universe to go mad over it!

This... was an astonishing item that should not exist in the universe!

Just a small thread of that nectar alone was enough for Su Ming to feel as if he was burning. Amid the booming sounds, his blood boiled, and his consciousness scattered under them. It was the case for his cultivation base clone, and it was the same for his clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole. However, Su Ming's Ecang clone retained his consciousness under those booming sounds, guiding Su Ming's soul in controlling his cultivation base clone and ceaselessly circulating his power to melt that bit of God Ascension Nectar.

Every single time his cultivation base completed a cycle in his body, the God Ascension Nectar would melt slightly and increase Su Ming's cultivation base with a loud bang. The wall between the peak of the initial stage of World Plane Realm and the middle stage of World Plane was swiftly broken after only circulating his cultivation base nine times.

Once Su Ming broke through, he realized that he could still not gather his thoughts. The power of the God Ascension Nectar in his body was too powerful, and he even had the false impression that his body was about to burst.

As he absorbed the God Ascension Nectar and had his cultivation base circulate the tenth time in his body, the screen of light that was formed on the warship could no longer withstand the vast presence spreading out from his body, and with a bang, it shattered inch by inch.

Once the screen of light shattered, all the cultivators on the warship instantly looked over. The nine old men's hearts trembled, and they stood up swiftly.

In fact, the thirteen warships also stopped at that instant.

“The young master is training, have the warships surround and protect him!” the old man who looked the oldest in appearance among the nine said in an awe-inspiring voice.

It was at this instant that the nine old men’s expressions suddenly changed, and they looked towards the pitch-black galaxy in the distance. In fact, even Xu Hui walked out from the air, and with a solemn expression, she looked towards Su Ming before shifting her gaze away, far ahead of them.

The space there was engulfed by a dead silence, but if anyone took a closer look, they would be able to see a ball of black fog swiftly expanding over there.

As it expanded, a sound that seemed like a baby wailing echoed faintly in the space.

That was... a powerful ferocious beast that lived in the periphery of Divine Essence Star Ocean... and it had been lured out by the God Ascension Nectar!

Chapter 909: A Serendipity, as Well as Danger

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

The screen of light shattered, and Su Ming’s figure which was sitting cross-legged inside was revealed to the world. It could be clearly seen that his body was entirely red at that moment, and there were veins on his skin. His body kept trembling, and his face was twisted, as if he was enduring great pain.

A heavy, fragrant scent spread out from Su Ming’s trembling body, and that fragrance was so strong that it swiftly spread outwards once the screen of light shattered. The ferocious beast that was letting out wails that sounded like an infant’s cries was instantly attracted by it.

That fragrance was enough to stir up the madness that existed in the ancient blood coursing through all ferocious beasts.

And the fragrance had only spread out just then. If it was given more time, then ferocious beasts from all over the place would come rushing over.

In fact, once the cultivators on the thirteen warships smelled that fragrance, their cultivation bases started circulating rapidly due to the stimulation. They felt like with each breath they inhaled, their cultivation bases increased.

This scene caused their hearts to tremble, and it did not matter whether it was the nine old men or the hidden Xu Hui, all of them looked swiftly towards Su Ming. Their

expressions might be different, but there was shock and bewilderment in their hearts right then.

“The Waves of Tears from Star Ocean!”

As the wails from the infant echoed in the air and the fog tumbled about in the distance, dark light shone on the thirteen warships. The catwoman’s pupils shrank, and she instantly spoke in a hurried tone with a flushed face. The effect of the fragrance from Su Ming was mild to cultivators compared to ferocious beasts. To them, the stimulation was much greater.

And as a catwoman, the young woman was caught in a state between that of a human and a creature; the fragrance from Su Ming was strong enough to leave her muddled. At that moment, she bit down on her tongue, and only that allowed her to clear her mind.

“This creature is a strange spirit that lives in the periphery of Divine Essence Star Ocean, but it is incredibly docile. It usually doesn’t attack those who pass by, but why would it... today...” At the instant the catwoman spoke, the sound of a baby crying reached them with a bang. This time, it was at a volume that was several times stronger than before.

The sound was piercing, and when it came towards them from the fog in the distance, a large numerous waves rose up in the galaxy, as if the sound had turned into waves that were tumbling through the sea.

Out of the twelve warships protecting Su Ming’s ships, three faced the Waves of Tears. Almost at the instant the piercing sound that left their ears ringing reached them, the three warships started inclining and were forced back by the impact.

“Its voice is like waves, and its wails can make it seem as if it can turn the galaxy into an ocean. As its voice tumbles about, the waves of sound can submerge space. This... This is the Waves of Tears, the creature that exists in the periphery of Divine Essence Star Ocean.” The catwoman’s face was slightly pale as she swiftly explained all she knew.

Once the woman finished speaking, one of the nine old man ordered in a ghastly voice, “Notify all warships and activate our strongest divine abilities at the same time. We will... shoot this creature down!”

“Sect Elder, you must not. This creature is not one that travels alone. It loves staying in the company of others of its kind. Once we attack, we might bring the other Waves of Tears to us, and at that time...” The catwoman quickly stopped him.

Before the old man could speak again, Xu Hui’s solemn voice interrupted him. “We will move past that creature.”

Until Su Ming regained consciousness, her voice was the highest ranking one in this group of people. Even the nine old men could only obey.

While protecting Su Ming, the warships slowly moved forward, intending to circle around the region and avoid the Waves of Tears.

Yet at the instant the thirteen warships were about to skirt past the creature, its shrill infant wail rose into the air once again. This time, the tumbling fog swiftly spread out, and from its previous size, which was ten thousand feet wide, it grew to nearly fifty thousand feet wide. It was also moving in the direction... of the thirteen warships.

The creature was preventing the thirteen warships from leaving. The sharp wails that stirred up the waves in the galaxy also seemed to possess the Waves of Tears' will to charge towards them from all directions like a tidal wave.

"You're just courting death!" The old man who had spoken just then might have his eyes shut, but when his cold voice echoed in space, it reached all the other thirteen warships. "Activate your strongest Arts and shoot the beast down!"

Since the Waves of Tears' animosity was so obvious, running away from it would not solve the problem, which was why when the old man spoke this time, Xu Hui did not stop him.

Almost at the instant the old man's words spread through the thirteen warships, the dark light in them grew brighter. When it grew so bright that it was dazzling, the bows of the thirteen warships swiftly sucked away all that dark light, as if there was a vortex contained there.

Bang!

A shocking loud bang echoed through the galaxy. Thirteen huge black pillars of light shot out from the thirteen warships, and with an astonishing presence, they swiftly burst forth. The thirteen pillars of light were like thirteen sharp arrows and instantly sliced through the galaxy, stirring up waves that surged up to the heavens. They crashed against the waves of sound formed by the piercing wail from the Waves of Tears.

Right before everyone's eyes, the thirteen pillars of light sliced through the air and crashed into the fog that was still expanding endlessly. However... just like a stone falling into the ocean, they were devoured by the fog, and not a single one of them could be seen anymore.

This scene landed in the eyes of those from Morning Dao Sect, but their expressions remained the same, and not much changes could be detected on them. In fact, a cold sneer even appeared on the nine elders' lips.

Almost at the instant those sneers appeared, a loud bang that drowned out all other sounds erupted from the fog.

In the mid of that noise, the fog fell apart. As parts of it tumbled outwards, the entire creature disintegrated.

However, at that moment, the sound of a baby crying surged into the sky from the fog that was falling apart. Monkey-like creatures that were only about one hundred feet big shot out and charged towards the ships in a swarm.

The massive Waves of Tears continued screeching nonstop. Once any of the monkey-like creatures rushed out, they would swiftly be surrounded by the fog, turning indistinct. This scene brought a great shock to the people from Morning Dao Sect.

This shock then turned into a tremor, and they felt their skins crawl.

This was because in the distance, ten more huge balls of fog appeared. The sounds of babies crying rose and fell... and farther into the distance, the group saw a meteor that was charging over at them!

The meteor was dark red, and underneath it were countless Waves of Tears that were around a thousand feet big. They were charging towards them while roaring and looking as if they were carrying the meteor.

In fact... on that meteor was a Waves of Tears that was one hundred thousand feet big. Its eyes were bloodshot and filled with greed. Its roars drowned out all the other sounds made by the other creatures.

“Activate full speed! Leave in haste!” Xu Hui could no longer remain calm, and her voice echoed in the air. In an instant, the thirteen warships let out huge booming sounds and turned into thirteen long arcs that charged into the distance.

However, right behind them were countless Waves of Tears that were charging right after.

“Damn monkeys! I hate monkeys the most!” The bald crane poked its head out from its room, and once it cast a glance at the endless Waves of Tears, it immediately shuddered and began gnashing its teeth in anger.

“Monkeys are the worst— Hmm? Why I do I feel as if I had a grudge against them in the past? Mm... Ah, I don’t care, no matter what it is, monkeys are the worst.” As it mumbled, it suddenly sniffed the air and looked towards Su Ming. Surprise appeared on its face.

“This fragrance... is familiar, very familiar. I seem to have eaten it in the past...”

As the bald crane was caught by surprise, the Abyss Dragon was already trembling next to it. With excitement on its face, it started circulating its cultivation base. It could clearly sense that its fragmented cultivation base was starting to show signs of recovery due to the stimulation by the fragrance.

Booming sounds echoed in the area around them. The Waves of Tears numbered to no less than several hundreds of thousands. This alone was enough to shake all cultivators. Unless they had a powerful warrior in Solar Kalpa Realm, it would be impossible for them to fight against that horde.

In fact, perhaps even a cultivator in Solar Kalpa Realm would find it hard to maintain his composure in the face of this swarm of Waves of Tears. After all, the mighty pressure coming from the Waves of Tears that was a hundred thousand feet big was powerful enough to intimidate all living things.

Su Ming was completely unaware of the danger the group faced at the moment. Right then, he was circulating all his cultivation base and continuously melting the God Ascension Nectar in his blood. As he circulated his cultivation base, each cycle he completed would cause booming sound in his body and make him tremble even harder. In fact, he even had a feeling like his soul was about to scatter.

This was... the effect of just a tiny bit of God Ascension Nectar, but even if there was only a tiny bit of it, it was already almost unbearable for Su Ming. If it was not because his Ecang clone was still providing for his soul and was guiding his cultivation base to circulate in his body to digest the nectar, then Su Ming's body would have already exploded.

Serendipity had no form, and it was difficult to get a clear grasp of it. This God Ascension Nectar delivered a great impact to all other life forms in the universe, but to the poisonous wasp, it was not the case. It could keep that God Ascension Nectar in its body without any danger. The nectar fused with its poison, but did not increase its offensive abilities. In fact, it did not have much of an effect to its poison either.

It was just like that poison. To the other living creatures, it was poison, but to the wasp itself, that poison brought no harm.

Su Ming's cultivation base was increasing swiftly as he continued melting the God Ascension Nectar. He had broken the wall that was the initial stage of World Plane Realm, and now that his cultivation based was still increasing, he was heading swiftly towards attain completion in the middle stage of World Plane Realm.

However... by then, he had only melted less than a three-tenths of that tiny bit of God Ascension Nectar in his body, yet he could sense that he had already reached his limit.

His soul could no longer continue, and his body was already finding it difficult to continue melting that nectar. His potential in the path of cultivation was even showing signs of being destroyed under the impact.

‘God Ascension Nectar... God Ascension Power... This tiny bit in my body is just a small portion of the God Ascension Nectar in the poisonous wasp’s body, but I can’t even melt all of this tiny bit. I need to get used to it for some time before I’ll be able to try again. If that is the case, then the God Ascension Nectar that still in my body will no longer be a serendipity, but become a fatal poison!’

Su Ming opened his eyes with great difficulty. The Divine Essence Runic Symbols on his Sacred Constellation Robe rose and fell, and this was a sign that he was using the power of Divine Essence to suppress the God Ascension Nectar.

At the instant he opened his eyes, he saw the endless Waves of Tears behind him, the solemn expressions on the faces of all those around him, and heard the screeches that traveled through the entire galaxy.

He also smelled the thick, fragrant scent coming from his body.

Chapter 910: Why Should I Leave?

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

Su Ming’s gaze changed. The unfocused look in his pupils disappeared, replaced by a brilliant light that shone in all directions. His expression immediately became dark. Based on his experience, he naturally understood why his warship had made these ferocious beasts mad in this galaxy.

This was clearly due to the fragrance coming from his body. After all, this fragrance... came from the God Ascension Nectar!

By then, Su Ming had only melted three-tenths of the God Ascension Nectar in his body. There was still more than half of it left in him because his body could not endure it. If he left it in his body, it would no longer be a serendipity, but would become a fatal poison.

This was why he could no longer continue circulating his cultivation base and melt it. Even though it would be a pity, he had to let it all out from his body. As his expression turned dark, a hint of determination shone in his eyes.

‘I miscalculated this time. I thought I could absorb the God Ascension Nectar if I only took a bit out... but by the looks of it, it’s not something I can melt even if it’s just a litt...’ Su Ming sighed.

At that moment, the swarm of Waves of Tears that were chasing after the thirteen warships let out increasingly more piercing roars. As the balls of fog charged forward, they fused together, becoming bigger, and their speed also increased exponentially.

It became so quick in fact that it became faster than the warships, and like a bolt of lightning, it charged towards them.

There were three balls of fog with this speed.

Each of them was nearly seventy thousand feet big, and as they charged forward, they looked like dark clouds gathering over the group's head. In an instant, the thirteen warships were enveloped.

"Activate the warships' divine ability, attack the fog in the middle!" Su Ming said in a dark tone without moving from his position. "Xu Hui, fog on the right. Nine Frail Darknesses, I will allow you to open your eyes for a while, attack the fog on the left!"

Su Ming did not say the three sentences quickly, but once they were voiced, the thirteen warships immediately turned around in one motion. The dark light at their bows grew to a blinding degree, and with a bang, thirteen pillars of light charged towards the fog that was the Waves of Tears in the middle.

Soon after, Xu Hui, who was hidden in the air, let out a cold harrumph. She might be displeased with Su Ming speaking to her in an authoritative tone, but she knew that this was not the time to refuse his request. Murderous aura shone in her long and narrow eyes, and she appeared near the ball of fog to her right. When she lifted her right hand, sixteen figures that looked exactly like her appeared behind her and struck with their palms in unison.

At the instant booming sounds reverberated in the air, all of the nine old men opened their eyes slightly in the direction of the ball of fog to the left, revealing a very distinct white light in the dark galaxy. These nine old men growled at the same time, lifted their right hands, and pointed at the fog.

Loud booms rose and fell as they reverberated in the air. The three balls of fog formed by the Waves of Tears instantly disintegrated and fell back in the midst of these bangs. At the same time as the balls of fog fell apart, nearly ten thousand Waves of Tears charged out from the scattered fog. Their shrill voices spread out in all directions, and they swiftly rushed towards Su Ming.

Killing intent shone in Su Ming's eyes. He saw the Waves of Tears staring at him, and the greed as well as madness in their eyes was enough proof to tell him that his previous guess had been correct—the ferocious beasts had been attracted by the fragrance of the God Ascension Nectar. Once he verified this point of view, he knew that there was little time for him left.

If the God Ascension Nectar could make these Waves of Tears go wild, then it would definitely make other ferocious beasts go mad as well. However, this region belonged to the Waves of Tears, which was why there were no other ferocious beasts around, but if this continued for too long, then the fragrance from the God Ascension Nectar would continue spreading and would definitely attract more ferocious beasts. At that time, Su Ming and his group would all die.

“Charge ahead at full speed. All hands, heed my words, do not leave the warship. Resist the ferocious beasts on your own ships,” Su Ming said in a low voice as his eyes shone. He had noticed some hints about these Waves of Tears when he observed them just then.

Fog was their protection, and it was an incredibly powerful one. It could withstand a full-powered strike from a cultivator in Lunar Kalpa Realm. Only by destroying that fog could they truly attack these Waves of Tears, since the beasts would need time to gather that fog around themselves again.

During the time they did not have the fog’s protection, the combat abilities of Waves of Tears would be the same as cultivators in Earth Cultivation Realm. However, since their numbers were so great, it was difficult to kill all of them swiftly.

Yet similarly, the thirteen pillars of light, which were the strongest power of the thirteen warships, also needed time to be activated. Because of that, there was a gap in time until the pillars of light could fire their next charge, and by then, the fog would have already gathered around the Waves of Tears once more.

On top of that, not all Waves of Tears were equivalent to cultivators in Earth Cultivation Realm. Some of them were seven to eight hundred feet tall, and they could bring forth power equivalent to those in Heaven Cultivation Realm.

There were also some who were more a thousand feet tall. Their offensive abilities were on equal grounds of people in the initial stage of World Plane Realm, and there were more than a few of them around.

This could only happen in Divine Essence Star Ocean; it would be hard to see such swarms anywhere else, and they were made of ferocious beasts with levels of cultivation that could shock others. In fact, Su Ming could even see some Waves of Tears that were ten thousand feet away in the distance whose mighty pressure was on that belonged to cultivators in the middle stage of World Plane Realm.

The most shocking one was the hundred thousand feet tall Wave of Tears sitting on the meteor situated farthest from them. That beast’s eyes were shining with a red light. It possessed intelligence, and the mighty pressure spreading out from it... was the might of heaven that could only be formed by monsters in Solar Kalpa Realm.

That beast was covered in fiery red fur, and it was clearly different from the other Waves of Tears. The relaxed look on its face also gave others a feeling that they were facing off against a cultivator.

There were four Waves of Tears that were eighty thousand something feet tall around that beast. These four beats were clearly very old, but based on their presence, he could tell that they were... at the peak of the later stage of World Plane Realm!

With these five Waves of Tears around, most of the cultivators in the universe would be shocked and terrified. Based on this, it could be seen that there was a reason why Divine Essence Star Ocean was known as the forbidden grounds.

And this was only the area near the periphery of Divine Essence Star Ocean. Su Ming's group had not yet even stepped into the danger zone. If they had, then there might be even more swarms of creatures like these, and there would also be those mysterious and enigmatic tribes of the alien races as well.

Those tribes had lived in Divine Essence Star Ocean for countless years, and survived alongside the alien creatures without getting destroyed, which could only mean that they something to support them and had their own areas which brought fear in others.

At that moment, Su Ming finally sensed how mysterious and powerful Divine Essence Star Ocean was. The swarm of Waves of Tears this time also left a powerful impression on his mind.

Su Ming's face turned dark. He knew that he had been reckless this time. As he sighed, he turned to face the Waves of Tears pouncing on him. Killing intent shone in his eyes. Shrill roars rose in the air, and the booming sounds from divine abilities reverberated in the galaxy.

There were thirteen warships, and each one was filled with around a thousand Waves of Tears. They were all fighting in a frenzy against hundreds of cultivators. The creatures had already gone mad, wanting to kill the cultivators without a care for anything. Su Ming even saw that when a cultivator died, a group of Waves of Tears would immediately pounce on the body, ripping and biting into the flesh as if looking for something there.

When Su Ming saw this, he instantly understood. The fragrance that came from the God Ascension Nectar in his body must have entered everyone's bodies once they inhaled it, but they could not immediately melt it, which was why some of it still remained in them, and this remnant was the source that caused the Waves of Tears to go mad.

The number of Waves of Tears on Su Ming's warship was the smallest, because his warship was protected by the others. If the beasts wanted to come in, they had to destroy the warships around him.

The battle instantly reached an intense state. Many Waves of Tears died, but their numbers were endless, and in fact, another four balls of fog that were seventy thousand something feet big were charging towards them from the distance.

There were hundreds of Waves of Tears that were one thousand feet big, several dozens of them that were ten thousand feet big, and even a gigantic one that was around fifty thousand feet big and possessed power equivalent to those in the later stage of World Plane Realm. They were all roaring while charging over.

“Young master, we are in a life-and-death situation right now. Please use your full power to activate the warship and leave. We are willing to give up our lives to buy time for you.”

“Young master, please leave!”

Voices saying such things were continuously coming into Su Ming’s ears from the warships around him. The fearless warriors from Morning Dao Sect were ready give up their lives for him. In fact, the value of their existence was to protect the direct descendants of Morning Dao Sect.

“Young master...” The nine old men beside Su Ming hesitated for a while before they looked at him.

The catwoman fell silent and waited for Su Ming’s choice by his side. With her understanding towards Dao Kong, she knew that he would choose to leave. As for her... she might be taken away, but if they ran into a danger they could not solve again, then it was certain that he would sacrifice her.

Xu Hui cast Su Ming a cold glance and let out a cold snort in her heart. With how much of a farce Dao Kong was, he would definitely pretend not to run first, but if it became more dangerous, he would choose to take some people and run.

The sounds of battle echoed in the air, and the whistling sounds that came as the Waves of Tears charged forth were getting closer. The warships might be fast, but there were numerous beasts that were fighting against the cultivators from Morning Dao Sect at the moment, so the Enchanted Vessels’ speed was becoming increasingly slower.

“Why should I leave?” Su Ming asked flatly. When he said these words, Xu Hui immediately laughed coldly, and her expression grew more disdainful and filled up with hate.

“Nine seniors of mine, you do not need to protect me, spread out and fend against the enemies! Xu Hui, if you have time to laugh coldly, then you have the time to let one less of my subordinates die! And you, change into your fastest form; otherwise, why should I keep you around?!”

Su Ming swept his gaze across everyone he mentioned. The nine old men lowered their heads and swiftly spread out, scattering among the warships, then executed their full strength to fight against the Waves of Tears.

Xu Hui still had a cold sneer on her face, but she did not refuse to obey his orders and joined the fight against the Waves of Tears.

As for the catwoman, she lowered her head and voiced her obedience. When she rose up, her head immediately became long and pointed. With a single move, she disappeared without a trace. She traveled so fast that she was swimming around the twelve warships. Wherever she went, blood would spill from the Waves of Tears, and shrill screams of pain would echo in the air.

Su Ming stood up. At the instant a glint appeared in his eyes, the Duke of Crimson Flame's totem manifested on his right arm underneath his sleeve.

"Duke of Crimson Flame, shift with me!" At the instant he sent his thought, his body disappeared, and when he appeared, he was beside the four balls of fog that belonged to the Waves of Tears in the distance.

His act of shifting shocked the cultivators from Morning Dao World, and anxiousness filled them, especially the nine old men. Their hearts trembled, and even Xu Hui was clearly stunned. She had not expected that Dao Kong would truly not run away... but choose to fight against the beasts personally.

'I will definitely not run away from the trouble I caused.'

Killing intent shone in Su Ming's eyes, and a large wave of the fragrance from the God Ascension Nectar spilled out from his body, because of which the Waves of Tears became even more crazed. Quite a large number of them on the warships even turned around and charged back towards him with piercing roars.

Su Ming lifted his right hand. The reason behind why the fragrance from the God Ascension Nectar had become so thick was because when he had circulated his cultivation base this time, he had abstained from melting God Ascension Nectar and used the simplest method to force it out of his body, which was by a windstorm that would purge the universe.

The power of the God Ascension Nectar was a serendipity, but once it was set aflame, it would turn into a bloodbath.

Chapter 911: Light Blue

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

In an instant, Su Ming was surrounded by countless Waves of Tears which roared in piercing voices. It sounded like they could penetrate the galaxy as they echoed in all directions.

In fact, there were even some of Waves of Tears that were one thousand something feet big. With madness as well as greed, they pounced on Su Ming.

“Fool!” Xu Hui’s expression changed, and without any hesitation, she intended to shift to save him. She knew that with his power, he could perhaps last for a while, but Dao Kong, who had not lived through much bloodshed and had not gone through many life-and-death situations was like a flower kept and protected in a house. He would definitely wilt and die when faced with a chilling wind.

She was also certain that Su Ming’s actions were due to a moment of impulse. This was not something Dao Kong would do normally, but it could come from a moment of hot-bloodedness. She might be calling him a fool from anger, but deep in her heart, her feelings towards him had changed slightly, but only in a barely noticeable manner.

The nine old men also sported drastic changes in their expressions. They immediately shifted, but the catwoman was even faster than they were. Almost at the moment Su Ming was surrounded by the Waves of Tears, she charged forth at full speed and appeared right in the mid of the swarm.

“Young master...” Once the catwoman appeared, she spoke anxiously, but just as she was about to break free of the encirclement with Su Ming, her voice died in her throat.

She saw Su Ming, but there was not a hint of panic on his face. He looked as sullen as ever, but there was calm underneath it. He allowed the Waves of Tears to surround him, allowed them to pounce on him and use their sharp claws to tear into him, as if he wanted his body to be torn apart.

But this was not the reason behind the catwoman’s words dying in her mouth. The real reason was that when the Waves of Tears tore at Su Ming with their sharp claws which could rip apart a cultivator’s body, there was a sound like they had hit bronze. The beasts could only scream at that moment.

Their claws cracked, making it seem like the amount of force they used to tear into Su Ming was the exact same force that rebounded back at them, and due to it, their claws shattered.

It was as if the resilience of Su Ming’s physical body was a wall that their claws could not tear apart.

A Wave of Tears that was one thousand feet big got close to him with a roar. Its body was huge, compared to which Su Ming looked like an ant. That one hundred thousand

feet Wave of Tears also used its sharp claws, which were the size of Su Ming whole, to tear at its prey.

Only the catwoman who had rushed into the swarm of Waves of Tears saw this, no one else. At the instant the catwoman's pupils shrank, Su Ming lifted his head, and the cold sneer on his lips became even colder. The killing intent in his eyes seemed to be able to stir up the galaxy around him, filling the area with a biting chill.

Bang!

Su Ming did not dodge, simply allowing the one thousand feet Wave of Tears to strike him with its claws, and the catwoman was left speechless.

The ferocious expression on the Wave of Tears' face turned into one of momentary shock, and veins popped up on its face. It had used its greatest strength, but much to its astonishment, it could not crush this seemingly weak cultivator. It was as if it had not grabbed a cultivator, but a freezing rock that could not be damaged at all.

What caused its roars to freeze as well was Su Ming slowly lifting his hands.

What he was doing was not the simple act of lifting his hands, because he had only started lifting his hands once that gigantic claw seized his body. His movement slowly unfurled the giant hand from around him, and it was something the one thousand feet Wave of Tears could not control. It was as if... Su Ming's strength had already surpassed that of the gigantic beast.

After Su Ming pushed open the Wave of Tears' fingers one by one, he clenched his right fist and punched the sharp claws in front of him.

A loud bang sounded in space, and the one thousand feet Wave of Tears trembled furiously. The frenzied look on its face instantly turned into fear when its claws were shattered. But the damage didn't stop there, it continued spreading up to its right arm, upper body, and then through all of its being. The Wave of Tears let out a shrill roar and then shattered with a bang.

At the instant this happened, a light blue light floated out of its body, lighting up the entire area. When Su Ming took notice of it, his body trembled.

A strange light instantly shone in his eyes. His expression changed, and that was because at the moment he saw that light blue glow... the black fragment that had always been with him, hidden in his soul, the fragment which was known as the Seed of Life Extermination by Ecang and which had not shown any other uses for a long time, suddenly released a wave of heat.

All the clones sensed that heat at the same time, as well as how it created a faint suction forced to suck in the light blue glow.

Su Ming was not unfamiliar with this feeling. It was... the exact same feeling as when he had entered the dimension in the fragment when he had been in Dark Mountain all those years ago.

His heart could not help but tremble fiercely. He had opened a couple doors within the fragment's dimension, but there were still plenty of them that he could not open, for he did not have sufficient medicinal pills required to open the next door. This had stopped him from progressing many years ago.

It was not that Su Ming did not have the materials to create them, but as his level of cultivation rose and as he experienced more things, he had very little time to calm down and create those medicinal pills.

A light swiftly shone in Su Ming's eyes. The thing that caused this suction force to appear from his black stone fragment and even gave him the feeling that he would only get when he entered the fragment's dimension stirred up a great amount of interest within Su Ming. He had a feeling that his stone fragment... would have a great change due to the swarm of creatures around him.

A brilliant light shone in Su Ming's eyes. However, once the one thousand feet Waves of Tears died and the light blue glow appeared, Su Ming was not the only one who noticed it. All of the Waves of Tears looked like they had gone mad. As they roared, they even gave up on the idea of surrounding Su Ming and attacking him. Instead, they charged towards that light blue glow.

It was as if that light blue glow was even more attractive and important than the God Ascension Nectar, or perhaps it would be more accurate to say... that this thing was more suitable for their kind.

This scene did not only make Su Ming's pupils constrict, but the catwoman also instinctively looked over. It was also at this moment that Xu Hui and the nine old men shifted over.

They saw at the same time that a Wave of Tears that was one hundred feet tall was standing closest to the light blue glow among the numerous Waves of Tears. It pounced on that glow recklessly, and it immediately fused with its body. In an instant, that Wave of Tears roared at the sky, and blood gushed out of its body. That was... due to its body being torn apart as its blood and flesh increased at a mad pace.

The creature's roars were filled with pain as its body expanded right before everyone's eyes. When it became one thousand feet tall... it jumped from possessing the offensive abilities of a cultivator of Earth Cultivation Realm to someone who could fight against a cultivator in the initial stage of World Plane Realm.

Its eyes were bloodshot. When it turned its gaze towards Su Ming, monstrous hate appeared there. Based on the emotion that flashed in its eyes just then... it actually somewhat resembled the Wave of Tears who had died moments before.

Roar!

The one thousand feet Wave of Tears roared at Su Ming, but it did not charge towards him. Instead, it retreated, charging backwards as if it was fleeing, wanting to be far away from this place.

"It's the first time I saw a method of inheritance like this." When he saw that the one thousand feet Wave of Tears wanted to flee, a faint glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes, and he chased after it.

The other Waves of Tears around spread out then and charged after Su Ming and the group with furious roars, as if the scene just now was something they were already used to and did not care.

Quite a number of Waves of Tears that were less than one thousand feet big had died recently, but the faint blue glow did not exist in their bodies. Only the one thousand feet Wave of Tears possessed that glow which made the other Waves of Tears descend into madness.

Su Ming's pupils constricted slightly, but he did not say anything about it. Instead, he took a step forward, and in an instant, he appeared right beside the fleeing one thousand feet Wave of Tears. He lifted his right hand again, and killing intent shone in his eyes. He forced out a little more of the God Ascension Nectar's power in his body.

A loud bang resounded in space. The one thousand feet Wave of Tears roared and turned its head as Su Ming struck it through space with his palm. Madness appeared on its face, but even if it had obtained the inheritance with that strange method, it still could not avoid the strike which possessed the power of God Ascension Nectar.

The one thousand feet Wave of Tears shuddered. Its body disintegrated and collapsed within an instant due to the wind brought by the palm strike. Then, another faint blue glow floated out of its body.

Before the other Waves of Tears could pounce on it, Su Ming's eyes sparkled. He moved and appeared right beside the faint blue glow, and seized it.

The one hundred thousand feet Wave of Tears on the meteor in the distance had a hint of a cold sneer on its lips. Clearly, it believed that the faint blue glow was not something a cultivator could control, but was instead something only the Waves of Tears could absorb.

In fact, based on what it could remember, there had been quite a number of cultivators who had gone after the Waves of Tears' inheritance, but all of them had their bodies and spirits destroyed once they completely absorbed it. There was no exception to this.

Because of this, at the instant Su Ming touched the glow, the one hundred thousand feet Wave of Tears' mouth curled up into an even more prominent sneer.

Yet immediately after, a strange change occurred!

The faint blue glow in Su Ming's hand was absorbed into his body, and a focused light appeared in his eyes. He could clearly sense that the heat spreading out from the black stone fragment was so strong that it seemed as if it could burn his soul.

Pursuit of the Truth #Chapter 912: Ancient Ballad - Read Pursuit of the Truth Chapter 912: Ancient Ballad

Chapter 912: Ancient Ballad

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

"There is an ancient ballad...

"In that ballad was a lonely old man...

"In the old man's eyes was a boundless world...

"That was during the time when the Gods existed. It was an age when all manner of living contended against each other. It was... a law when the universe operated due to a single person's will..."

A faint voice rose swiftly in Su Ming's mind and echoed in his head. The ancient air in that voice gave Su Ming a feeling that the owner was even older than Sui Chen Zi.

"People worshiped this old man. They used strange items as offerings to him, strange treasures as sacrifices for him... so that they could obtain the right for themselves or their race to be written in the ballad...

"Legends say that all the people or races written in the ballad will not decay as long as that ballad exists, and they would also grow from normal beings to prosperous existences...

"However, over the course of numerous years, only nine lives and four races obtained the old man's acknowledgement with the items they offered and were written into his ballad...

“From then on... those nine lives and four races began their legend as eternal entities...”

Su Ming’s mind rumbled as the voice in his head became even more ancient. While it continued echoing in his head, it was like the universe had come to a stop at that instant and Su Ming’s consciousness was the only thing that moved, tumbling about.

It was also during the instant that the voice echoed in his head that a loud bang rang out in his mind, shaking his soul. In the mid of it, a layer of distortions suddenly appeared around him. In the blink of an eye, they turned into a gigantic vortex. As it spun, it devoured Su Ming like a huge gaping mouth in space, and he disappeared without a trace in the galaxy.

Su Ming’s heart trembled, but he did not panic. This was not the first time he had this sort of experience. This was... the process of entering the dimension in the fragment. When everything before his vision cleared, he looked around him, and a familiar sight appeared in front of his eyes.

Fog surrounded the area, making everything around him indistinct, but he saw a mountain in the distance. The door in the mountain was open, as if it was waiting for his arrival. All of this was just as he had seen before. This was... the world in the black stone fragment.

However, this time, Su Ming did not take the initiative to come to this place. Instead, some strange changes had occurred to the black fragment which forcefully sucked him inside.

Almost at the instant Su Ming looked towards the mountain, voices that sounded like roars rang out in the world of the stone fragment. These voices were like heavy breaths, and as they reverberated in the air, the land started trembling.

Su Ming’s pupils constricted.

He saw nine indistinct ferocious beasts with the shells of turtles, the heads of dragons, and the tails of snakes in the sea of clouds in the sky above. As they roared, they descended from the sea of clouds.

Each one of them was tens of thousands of feet big, and that heavy breathing came from their mouths. There was a chain around each of their bodies, and as they descended, these chains were stretched taut, as if there was some strange item in the sea of clouds and these nine dark turtles intended to drag it out.

As the roars became stronger, Su Ming gradually saw... a mountain in the sea of mountains. It was forcefully dragged out, and when most of its body appeared, it landed on the ground with a bang.

The height and the majestic feeling this mountain gave off surpassed those of the mountain that existed here before. In truth, when the two were put in comparison, they looked like a giant and a child.

The gigantic second mountain was several times larger than the first mountain. It also had a gigantic stone door, and on that door were written several ancient letters.

A ghastly feeling spread out from those letters, and that feeling was incredibly great. Su Ming felt like his soul and his body were being corroded away at the instant he saw them

His heart trembled as he looked at the letters. At the instant he saw them, he naturally understood the meaning those words they tried to convey.

Nurture, decaying spirit.

The second part stood for: When all lives die, everything about rots away That was the meaning! However, the nurture before the other two words made Su Ming a little uncertain. He was not entirely clear about what it meant and could not decipher its specific meaning.

When the mountain descended, the chains on the nine gigantic dark turtles who had dragged it out of the sea of clouds slowly faded away, as if they were to completely disappear. It was as if they... could now be free. Delight, excitement, and exhilaration appeared on the nine turtles' faces, and it was so great they could not hide it.

There was a storm raging in Su Ming's heart at that moment. He had not expected that there would be a second mountain in the black stone fragment and that it would appear in front of him at this moment.

Su Ming was no longer the child he once was in the past. His experiences had caused his will to be incredibly firm, while the ups and downs he faced had trained him to be very skilled in working out things around him.

'If there is a second mountain, then there is definitely a third mountain. Judging by when this second mountain appeared, it's clear... that this was due to the fragment absorbing the light blue glow from that Waves of Tears.

'This is the key!'

A glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes. He had only opened a couple doors in the first mountain within the fragment's dimension, so he did not know how many had been left, and he did not have enough medicinal pills on his person at that moment either, which was why he could not choose to continue venturing into the first mountain.

'The key to the second mountain's appearance was the spirit that appeared after the Waves of Tears died. The name of the second mountain is Decaying Spirit. I... should learn what the second mountain contains.'

After remaining silent for a moment, he looked at the nine dark turtles whose chains had started disappearing. His eyes sparkled, and without any hesitation, he charged towards the door of the second mountain.

The fog in the land was like an ocean. As it tumbled about, Su Ming moved through. The second mountain did not seem far, but when went to it, there was some distance between them. After a moment, when Su Ming stood at the foot of the mountain, he lifted his head, and a feeling of shock rose in his heart.

Compared to the mountain, Su Ming was like an ant. In fact, even if he only compared himself to the gate, he was still very insignificant. He sucked in a deep breath. Based on his experience, he lifted his right hand before the stone gate to the second mountain and placed it there.

Almost at the moment his hand came into contact with the mountain gate, booming sounds that shook the sky and earth reverberated in the air. They continued spreading outwards, and the gate to the second mountain swung inwards in front of Su Ming.

While standing still, he felt a cold breeze blowing through the gap in the opened gate. It lifted his long hair and caused his robes to flutter. There seemed to be muffled mumbling sounds that could not be heard clearly in the wind, as if it was saying how ancient it was...

Su Ming quietly waited for the mountain gate to open completely, then a brilliant light shone in his eyes. In front of him was a gigantic cave that was dark inside. Not a single hint of light could be seen within, only a gust of waning wind blew past him.

Su Ming sucked in a deep breath and took a step towards the cave.

Almost at the moment his foot landed, dark light lit up the cave. The light came from the oil lamps had had come to life out of nowhere. As the tunnel was illuminated by the dark light, the ghastly feeling became even greater, but Su Ming was now able to see his surroundings clearly.

At the moment he did so, his pupils constricted, and the foot he had lifted froze in the air. He saw several totems on the walls around him. Those totems had pictures, and in those pictures... were endless Waves of Tears!

They looked extremely alive, but their expressions were hideous, as if they wanted to rush out of the totems. This gave a strong visual impact to anyone who saw them.

At the end of the cave, Su Ming saw the first stone door of the second mountain!

There was a light blue glow at the center of the stone door at the moment. The glow flickered, and each time it did so, endless light blue threads would spread out, covering the entire door like a cobweb.

Su Ming remained silent for a moment, then lifted his foot and walked towards the end of the cave, straight towards the door. After a moment, when he arrived at the stone door, he fell into pensive silence. Based on his past experiences, he lifted his right hand and pressed his palm against the mountain gate.

At the instant his hand touched the door, his long hair began to dance in the air, and his eyes swiftly gained focus.

“At the end of the ancient ballad... the old man closed his eyes...

“The nine lives and four races became eternal entities that would never decay in the ballad...

“The old man turned into a statue. The statue was black, and he... shattered, turning into thirteen pieces that scattered into the world...

“Before they scattered, five words echoed in the minds of the nine lives and four races... Seed of Life Extermination.

“This is a cycle of life. This is a cycle... in which the will of the universe moves from being something that existed into something that does not exist. It is also... a cycle in which it went from something that did not exist to something that existed.

“Welcome back, you who possess the blood of the Abyss Builders and the will of Ecang. The Seed of Life Extermination has been resurrected because of you...

“The first spirit you offered is the spirit of the Wave of Tears. There is a flaw in this spirit. Find that flaw, and you can exterminate this race... You have endless time. Go to the place where you offered medicinal pills in the past and create a Decaying Spirit Core that will stimulate the flaw in this spirit. If you give up... you will show that you have not chosen the Wave of Tears’ spirit as your first step to nurture Life Extermination Spirit,” the voice said in Su Ming’s head.

That voice seemed to be something that was left behind from ancient times. By then, it was slowly disappearing, the instant it vanished, Su Ming’s mind trembled.

A huge suction force spread out from the stone gate, but it was not sucking Su Ming’s body. Instead, it was absorbing his will.

It was a force that he could not resist, and so he swiftly closed his eyes.

His body was still in the cave, his hand was still on the stone door, but his soul had been sucked inside, immersed in an age that was ancient in Su Ming's eyes.

It was a galaxy without stars. In it was a vast ancient ship that was broken, and as it drifted in the galaxy, an old man sat at the bow, looking into the distance quietly. He did not move.

Su Ming also looked into the distance, and he became the old man.

From his position, he could see a black dot flying towards him from far away. It was a crane with a prideful and sleazy expression on its face. The creature's presence was extremely peculiar and kept on changing all the time.

The crane was flapping its wings and flying swiftly towards the area. Behind it were hundreds of thousands... of Waves of Tears. They were trapped in a gigantic net and were towed by the crane to this place.

"Hey, old man. The offering I brought to you this time is most of the members of a race~"

Chapter 913: Decaying Spirit Core

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

"Your Grandpa Cra... Er, I don't want much either, just a spot in the ballad. Just a spot. Even if you want me to call you grandpa, I'll do it. I just want a spot!" The black crane had an expectant look on its face. As it flapped its wings, it came to the broken ship and appeared in front of Su Ming.

The huge net behind it stretched endlessly. In it were hundreds of thousands of Waves of Tears packed densely together, and none of them were less than a thousand feet big. There were also quite a few that were ten thousand feet large, and there were even a dozen something of those that were one hundred thousand feet.

What caused Su Ming's heart to tremble was a Wave of Tears that exuded an old presence through its entire body among those captive. Its body was entirely gold, and it was four hundred thousand feet in size. It had its eyes closed and did not move.

"You again, small crane," an ancient voice speaking in a strange rhythm elegantly tumbled out of the old man's mouth, in whose body Su Ming currently resided.

The voice was not Su Ming's though, but that of the old man.

Su Ming might feel that he had become the old man, but in truth, it would be more accurate to say that he was currently observing this scene that once happened and from the old man's eyes

He looked at the black crane in front of him. There had been some slight uncertainty in his heart, but when he heard its voice and sensed pride and sleaziness within it, he was certain that this black crane was the bald crane.

If he formed his deductions based on this, then this era was incredibly ancient...

'Nine lives and four races...' A thought appeared in Su Ming's head.

'Ecang and the bald crane are of the same category of life. Could it be that... they are among the nine lives spoken in the ballad?' This thought made Su Ming's pupils shrink. At that moment, the old man spoke up once again.

"Whether you can get a spot or not depends on whether the offerings you brought are the things I need."

The old man shook his head, lifted his right hand, and pointed at the black crane. A Wave of Tears of around two thousand something feet instantly faded away from the net. When it reappeared, it was already in front of the old man.

Once that Wave of Tears left the net, it immediately roared in a piercing tone. A fierce light and a mad glint appeared in its eyes, and it lifted its right claw to close in on the old man.

The old man's expression remained the same. He only cast a flat glance at the incoming Wave of Tears, and the creature trembled. The fierce light in its eyes disappeared, and at the moment it closed in, its body came to a swift stop. It lowered its head to bow down and worship the old man.

Su Ming saw the old man lifting his right hand, or rather, he felt himself lift his right hand and press it on the top of the Wave of Tears' head. With it, a gentle wave of power surged into the creature's body. Once that power circulated through, the Wave of Tears started trembling fiercely. It lifted its head, and its roars shook the heavens. Its eyes were bloodshot, and its body swelled up before his eyes. In the blink of an eye, it was no longer just a ferocious beast that was one thousand feet, but had grown to ten thousand feet.

It was as if the gentle energy from the old man's hands was a strange power that would stimulate life forms like the Wave of Tears. As the power swam in the body of the Wave of Tears, the full power of the inheritance lying in its blood was brought out.

It was a shocking scene that astonished Su Ming. He did not know what sort of level of cultivation would be needed to enable a person to make a ferocious beast become a superior life form within an instant.

But it wasn't over yet. Su Ming saw that when the gentle power from the old man's right hand circulated through the Wave of Tears' body for the second time, its ten thousand feet body trembled even more furiously. In the blink of an eye, blood gushed out from everywhere. Its flesh and blood started growing in a bizarre manner as its body continued getting larger, and with a pained and crazed roar, the creature... shot up to one hundred thousand feet from the initial ten thousand feet.

The shock Su Ming felt was difficult to describe with words. He stared intently at that Wave of Tears, interested to see what would happen to this creature when the old man's power circulated through its body for the third time.

In the span of a breath, the power made its third round.

The one hundred thousand feet tall Wave of Tears shuddered. Blood covered every inch of its body, and it swiftly swelled up. Two hundred thousand feet, three hundred thousand feet, four hundred thousand feet... As the size of its body continued increasing exponentially, desire and resolve appeared on the black crane's face. The Waves of Tears in the boundless net behind it were stunned. They looked at the Wave of Tears that had become seven hundred thousand feet tall, and their bodies trembled before they bowed down to worship it, as if they were paying respect to their king.

However, almost the instant they bowed down to worship that Wave of Tears and it reached nearly nine hundred thousand feet, it let out a shrill scream of pain that shook the universe. With a bang... its body fell apart, unable to withstand the abrupt rise in power to become an even more superior life form. The power then caused it to burst.

"So, old man, how are my offerings this time?" the black crane quickly asked with an anxious look on its face. "Old man, if it still doesn't work this time, I have no idea what to do anymore. It's been so many years, and I brought so many offerings for you. It's just a spot, do you seriously need to be so stingy?!" When the black crane saw that the old man was still not speaking, it instantly became anxious.

"It's still not enough," the old man said faintly after some time. "But this time, the offerings can stay."

When the black crane heard the old man's first sentence, it became dejected, but when it heard the second sentence, its eyes immediately brightened up. It hadn't thought that it could get a spot in the ballad in just one go, anyway. As long as the old man accepted its offerings, then as they accumulated over a long period of time, a chance to obtain a spot in the ballad would show up.

The crane beamed with joy, and it immediately turned into a long arc and left. It charged out into the distant galaxy, and in an instant, it disappeared without a trace.

Once the black crane left, Su Ming looked at the hundreds of thousands of Waves of Tears in the net, and a contemplative look appeared on his face. He had no idea why the black stone fragment had sucked his soul into this illusion of something that had clearly happened in an ancient past.

At that moment, he could not help but remember the voice that had echoed in his head when he touched the door inside the mountain within the fragment's dimension.

"The first spirit you offered is the spirit of the Wave of Tears. There is a flaw in this spirit. Find that flaw, and you can exterminate this race... You have endless time. Go to the place where you offered medicinal pills in the past and create a Decaying Spirit Core that will stimulate the flaw in this spirit. If you give up... you will show that you have not chosen the Wave of Tears' spirit as your first step to nurture Life Extermination Spirit."

Su Ming frowned, then was stunned. He had felt before like he had turned into the old man just even if he was just watching the whole thing from his eyes. Yet right then, when he frowned, a thought formed in Su Ming's head, and a glint appeared in his eyes. He lifted his right hand, lowered his head, and slowly stood up.

Within the vast galaxy, Su Ming stood at the bow of the gigantic ship that was broken and cast his gaze to the area ahead of him. It was pure darkness.

After a moment of mulling over his thoughts, Su Ming suddenly said slowly, "Medicinal pills."

Almost at the instant he said these words, the space in front of him distorted and medicinal pills of all kinds appeared. They were all the pills that Su Ming had used as an offering to open the mountain doors when he was in the cave in the first mountain within the fragment's dimension.

As he looked at these medicinal pills, Su Ming seemed to be able to see his past. He recalled the memories of the things that had happened way in the past and were buried deep within his mind.

He sighed softly, then recollected his thoughts. He looked at the medicinal pills floating in front of him, then at the hundreds of thousands of Waves of Tears trapped in the net. Gradually, he came to a realization.

First of all, this was an illusory dimension. Second, medicinal pills as well as hundreds of thousands of Waves of Tears were presented before Su Ming, which would mean that they were test subjects for his experiment.

With the knowledge of the different combinations of these medicinal pills, he needed to go through a secondary stage of creation and create a pill that targeted the flaw within Waves of Tears. This would then allow him to exterminate the entire race, and that pill would be called Decaying Spirit Core!

‘The creation of this Decaying Spirit Core will require numerous tries. I will need a complete understanding of Waves of Tears, a thorough knowledge of their habits, lifestyle, and structure of their bodies before finding a way to target their weakness and create Decaying Spirit Core.

‘Let’s not mention whether I can succeed or not first. Even if I were to create it in the end, I would need an incredibly long time to do so... Based on this, the flow of time in this illusory dimension should not be the same as in the world outside.’

A thought appeared in Su Ming’s head, and he looked towards the net floating ahead of him in space. The hundreds of thousands of Waves of Tears in it were no longer roaring, but maintained their postures, as if they had been frozen in time.

‘In fact, there’s even a possibility... that the time here... has been frozen, because this is something that happened in the past. This is not the present, and there is nothing between these two times that exists together.’

Su Ming’s eyes sparkled. This sort of a dimension was not unfamiliar to him. Black stone fragment’s dimension, Candle Dragon’s world, and Ecang’s world—he had experienced quite a lot of these dimensions in his life.

The flow of time within them was often different from the world outside. In some of them, time flowed slower, while in others it moved at the same as in the world outside. Su Ming had thought about it before, wondering about the reason why the flow of time in these dimensions was different.

However, this sort of thing was too complicated, and he had never really figured it out. At that moment, he looked at the space around him, and after a period of silence, his gaze focused. When he raised his right hand, he pointed at the hundreds of thousands of Waves of Tears in the net.

One spot in the net immediately freed up. The Wave of Tears that had been pointed out disappeared from the net and reappeared beside Su Ming. Its eyes were, and it was staring at Su Ming, but was just like a statue that did not move.

Su Ming looked at the Wave of Tears before him and lifted his right hand to press his palm against the creature. His Atman spread out and fused with the beast’s body, and he began to observe it in detail.

His goal was to understand everything about this creature, and from there, find the flaw that would allow him to exterminate this race, then create the Waves of Tears' Decaying Spirit Core!

'When the old man touched the Wave of Tears, he managed to instantly make this creature an superior life form, and it continued becoming greater. It's clear that during that instant, he had come to completely understand the Wave of Tears' entire structure of life, which was why he could do this.

'If he could do it at that time, then he could easily do the same for all other manner of life as well.

'He only needed an instant, but I will need an endless amount of time, but the direction we're heading towards is the same. One of these days, I will be able to do it as well.'

Chapter 914: Waves of Tears Core

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

A hint of determination appeared in Su Ming's eyes. He had lived with plenty of complications in his life and went through plenty of life-and-death situations, but after every single trial and crisis, he had also received serendipities that far surpassed what other people obtained.

It did not matter whether it was his Ecang clone or the transformation in the black stone fragment. Either one of them alone was already enough to have him stand proudly and laugh at the universe, yet Su Ming had obtained both of them at the same time. It could be said that these two had opened a wide path for his future.

Su Ming sat down cross-legged and meditated. Several hours later, he moved his right hand from the Wave of Tears in front of him. The creature might not be moving, but the instant Su Ming lifted his right hand, it turned into ashes and scattered away.

Su Ming remained silent for a short while before pointing at the net with his right hand. Another Wave of Tears appeared in front of him, and with the same method, Su Ming continued his process of understanding the structure of life within Waves of Tears.

Time trickled by slowly. Under the continuous process of observing and understanding, Su Ming forgot about time. He only vaguely remembered that there tens of thousands of Waves of Tears had been reduced to ashes as he investigated them.

A picture slowly drew itself in Su Ming's mind. That picture was mainly an outline, and from its shape, it could be seen that this was the image of a Wave of Tears.

Su Ming closed his eyes. This time, he fell into pensive silence for several months. When he opened his eyes again, he caught another Wave of Tears. As his eyes sparkled, he drew a line over it with his right hand, and its body was instantly cut open. He seized one bone and started examining it to get a feel for it.

He did not know how much time had passed. When nearly a third of the hundreds of thousands of Waves of Tears were reduced to ashes, a complete skeletal frame appeared in the outline of the Wave of Tears in Su Ming's mind.

This skeletal frame was the perfect set of bones that Su Ming concluded was the one that fit all Waves of Tears after observing tens of thousands of them.

With the contour and the bones done, next would be the nerves and the blood vessels. Su Ming calmed his heart and mind, then immersed himself in researching the body structure of Waves of Tears, ceaselessly examining how their nerves and blood vessels were arranged. From tens of thousands of test subjects, he found the slight differences between them and also their similarities.

In time, the contour of the Wave of Tears in Su Ming's mind possessed not only bones, but also thin threads of green and red that were intersecting with each other. These thin threads went through every single spot within the Wave of Tears' contour and formed a more complete picture of the creature.

Once Su Ming finished doing this, he sensed a feeling of ancientness, and it rose from his heart. This was due to him spending an unknown amount of time on his research. Even though Su Ming had deduced that time did not move in this place, his heart was still beating. Because of that, even though he was in this dimension where time was frozen, he still gained an ancient presence.

'It now has shape, bones, and also nerves. What it lacks is... flesh and blood.'

A glint appeared in his eyes, and he immersed himself in understanding the flesh and blood of Waves of Tears. There weren't that many creatures left in the net, but for the moment, it was enough. After around ten hundred thousand something Waves of Tears were reduced to ashes in Su Ming's hands, a complete picture appeared in his head.

This beast had form, flesh and blood, bones, and nerves. The picture was a detailed description of Waves of Tears Su Ming compiled after years of research which resulted in the deaths of a hundred thousand something Waves of Tears.

At that moment, it could be said that Su Ming's understanding regarding Waves of Tears was even greater than what these creatures understood of themselves. He knew every single thing about their bodies, no matter whether it was a small detail or an overall view. He also understood where this creature stood in the pyramid of life like the back of his hand.

Once one hundred thousand something Waves of Tears were destroyed, a slight presence that was hard to describe and could only be sensed by Waves of Tears appeared about him. Due to it, they would see him as a natural enemy, since this presence was a murderous aura that gathered about him when one hundred thousand something Waves of Tears had died in his hands. Once Su Ming completely understood Waves of Tears, that knowledge became a force that came from within his heart!

At that moment, all the Waves of Tears in Su Ming's eyes, no matter how big they were, were completely transparent.

When he lifted his right hand and another Wave of Tears appeared in front of him, he lifted a finger and gently tapped the spot three inches below the Wave of Tears' chest.

With that one tap, the Wave of Tears trembled. Su Ming did not lift his finger, but drew a line downwards, then had it move through the entire Wave of Tears' body. He did not use too much of his power, but at the instant he lifted his right hand, the Wave of Tears fell down. The creature seemed normal when that happened, but in truth, all the blood vessels in its body had completely dried up and withered.

This was not done due to Su Ming's divine ability, but from his understanding towards Waves of Tears. Because of his knowledge, they were so frail to him that they could not withstand a single blow.

In reality, he just needed to cast a glance at a Wave of Tears, and he would immediately see all its blood, flesh, bones, and nerves. Not a single one would remain a secret from him.

It could be said that if Su Ming left this place at this moment and appeared outside in the galaxy, then in the face of the Waves of Tears that came to him in madness and greed, he could teach them who their natural enemy was and the definition of fear.

"I don't know how much time I've spent to be able to do this, but when that old man pushed his palm down on the Wave of Tears, he had clearly reached this level," Su Ming mumbled quietly after remaining silent for a moment.

"He understood the Wave of Tears' structure completely, and that's why he could create the Decaying Spirit Core that could exterminate this race from these medicinal pills."

A slightly freezing glare shone in Su Ming's eyes. If this dimension's time was frozen, then it also meant that the world outside was still the same as before he left. In other words, the one hundred thousand something Waves of Tears were still around.

Su Ming wanted to create the Decaying Spirit Core that targeted Waves of Tears to resolve the danger brought by the God Ascension Nectar.

He remained silent for a moment before lifting his right hand to point at the floating medicinal pills. They immediately came towards him. With eyes shining brightly, he stared at the medicinal pills and pondered for a moment before taking out several dozen Waves of Tears from the net. He lifted his right hand and swung it, and one of each of the medicinal pills floating in front of him flew into the mouths of Waves of Tears.

‘Since this place is an illusion, then besides having an endless supply of Waves of Tears, there will surely be an endless amount... of medicinal pills as well. This dimension is just a place for me to search for the method to create Decaying Spirit Core. The true creation will only happen once I leave this place, and that will be when I am in front of the door in the cave of the second mountain.’

Su Ming had experienced far too many things in his life, and his train of thought had already become mature. He just needed to think about a small matter like this for a moment, and he would understand the cause and effect as well as the order in which things happened.

Almost at the instant the medicinal pills fell into the Waves of Tears’ mouths, distortions appeared in the area beside Su Ming. The same amount of medicinal pills appeared once again, verifying his assumption.

Su Ming did not look at the newly appeared medicinal pills. Instead, brilliant light shone in his eyes as he focused on the dozen something Waves of Tears. He began observing them to find out the changes and the differences between them after they ate the medicinal pills.

After confirming that there were differences between them, he recorded each change brought by the pills in his mind, then fused that knowledge into the picture of the Wave of Tears in his head to begin making inferences. This process was long, but Su Ming was not in the least bit anxious. His expression was as calm as ever. As time passed, he continued with his tests.

From feeding only one medicinal pill, he gradually went to two, then three, until one of the Wave of Tears swallowed all the medicinal pills at once. Su Ming’s heart was immersed completely in his experiments and the transformations in the Waves of Tears as he searched for their flaw.

Slowly, the number of Waves of Tears in the net dwindled. Currently, less than two-tenths of them were left, which was around sixty-seventy thousand.

The Waves of Tears which had died in Su Ming’s hand had accumulated to two hundred thousand something in the passage of time.

‘If mixed together, these medicinal pills can produce additional effects...’ Su Ming lifted his right hand and swung it, and the Wave of Tears in front of him with bloodshot eyes and a body that seemed to be melting was reduced to powder.

'This is the 3,761st formula, but it can only make the Wave of Tears' skull melt. I can't kill it instantly.' Su Ming shook his head. This was not the Decaying Spirit Core he wanted.

'I might not know the effects of Decaying Spirit Core that can destroy an entire race... but in my mind, there is one medicinal pill that can be considered to be able to... destroy a body when it explodes.' A look that said Su Ming was remembering the past appeared in his eyes. He recalled... Scattering Blood, the pill he created when he was still a child!

It was a pill that could melt a person at the moment it touched their blood, and it was an incredibly domineering pill.

"If a creature's body would explode once it melted, its blood would scatter everywhere, and all Waves of Tears who were touched by that blood would also melt and explode... This is Decaying Spirit Core that is to my liking," Su Ming mumbled, and hint of ruthlessness surfaced in his eyes.

Time passed, and the mixing of the medicinal core continued. It did not matter whether it was a full pill or half a pill, or even just a tiny bit of it. Su Ming used all sorts of formulas he could think of, and tried out all of them without delay.

The number of Waves of Tears went to only around thirty-forty thousand from the sixty-seventy thousand, and in time, there were only thousands of them left...

"The 78,645th formula is still too gentle..."

"The 81324th formula is not the one..."

When there were less than a few hundreds of Waves of Tears in the net, Su Ming's body suddenly trembled. The ten thousand feet tall Wave of Tears in front of him turned red from his latest formula and fell apart in an instant. Its blood then gushed out everywhere.

A focused glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes. He thought back on the formula he'd used for this medicinal core, and slowly, a brilliant light started shining in his eyes.

"When different medicinal pills are fused together, the blood of Waves of Tears will react and transform, and this change is one that does not fuse with these creatures' structure of life. The moment they touch this abnormal blood, it will fuse with their bodies, and melt them in a process that looks like devouring.

"I'll need to add in a power that will make them explode as well, and this power will depend on the levels of cultivation. The higher the cultivation level of a Wave of Tears will be, the greater explosion it will produce." A smile appeared on Su Ming's lips, and he swiftly stood up. "This core will be named Core of Waves of Tears!"

Chapter 915: Return

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

At the instant Su Ming got up, the illusory dimension immediately cracked. As the sound echoed in the air, the world shattered around Su Ming like a mirror.

His body shattered along with it until he turned into powder and disappeared in the vast space.

Almost at the instant this happened, Su Ming, who had his right hand pressed against the gigantic stone door in the cave of the second mountain, suddenly shuddered violently.

His eyes flew open, and he sucked in a deep breath, as if his soul had returned to its body.

His expression changed swiftly, and his right hand on the stone door started trembling uncontrollably. He felt that his soul and body were very out of sync with each other at that moment, causing him to feel incredibly unfamiliar with himself.

A small part of this feeling came from his body, but a larger part of it... was the sense of time flowing around him once again.

The illusory dimension was very different from this place, and Su Ming had been a locus that acted as an intersection point between the two. He had returned from the still dimension after a long time, so it was only natural that he had a strong sense of not being comfortable with his surroundings.

Su Ming lowered his head and looked at his right hand. He saw that it was trembling. In silence, his heart gradually calmed down, and a brilliant light shone in his eyes.

'I wonder how many years I've been in that illusory dimension. Time might not have moved there, but the amount that was supposed to pass had still gathered around me, giving me an ancient air... Among the eighty thousand something formulas of medicinal pills aimed to target Waves of Tears, I've finally managed to create the Core of Waves of Tears!'

Su Ming sucked in a deep breath, and his gaze fell on the stone door. With a glint in his eyes, he took a step forward, lifted his right hand, and pushed his hand against the stone door once more.

Almost at the instant he did so, the stone door let out a loud bang, and the light threads spreading outwards from the light blue glow that resembled a cobweb shrank back. When they collected into a single dot, it turned into a light blue vortex.

At the same time, medicinal pills flew out of the vortex and floated in front of Su Ming. The pills before him were the ones that he had offered a long time ago as a child. They were also the same ones that he had used for his experiments in the illusory dimension.

Yet the medicinal pills that appeared this time were no longer limitless in quantity. These were the only ones around.

However, to Su Ming, even if there was no longer an infinite supply, it did not matter. He had already found the perfect formula, and he could successfully create the medicinal core in one go.

He swept his gaze across the medicinal pills and lifted his right hand in a swing to immediately bring one closer. Once he crushed it, he only took the skin. Then, he took another medicinal pill, crushed it, and took a third of its contents. Complex procedures such as these continued until Su Ming skillfully created a Core of Waves of Tears an hour later over the ball of flames he had summoned out of thin air on his right hand.

The core was as red as blood, and it looked quite terrifying. It was as if this was not a medicinal core, but a ball of blood. Waves of malicious aura spread out from that Core of Waves of Tears, along with a thick, sweet scent.

If anyone caught a whiff of it, they would definitely be intoxicated, but if they sniffed it several more times, the person would want to hurl ceaselessly in a manner as if they wanted to even throw up their organs.

“Waves of Tears, I’m returning.”

Killing intent appeared in Su Ming’s eyes, and he turned into a long arc that swiftly left the cave, the second mountain, and... the stone fragment’s dimension.

.....

Beyond the periphery of Divine Essence Star Ocean was a galaxy that would occasionally have dazzling stellar streams appear in it. Roars that sounded like infants crying rose and fell there, reverberating in all directions. If anyone looked from above, they would be able to see that there were a hundred thousand something Waves of Tears in that place. These creatures were of various sizes—some were one hundred feet in size, others one thousand feet, and some even ten thousand feet—and they all had expressions of madness, bloodthirstiness, and greed.

There were thirteen warships that were surrounded by the one hundred thousand something Waves of Tears. In the mid of their roars and madness, Waves of Tears were launching wave after wave of attacks on their targets.

Holding out against them were thousands of cultivators. They were exhausted and had injuries of various degrees on their bodies, but they did not retreat even a single bit. Instead, they gritted their teeth and persevered, even if their cultivation bases were almost completely used up, even if their Enchanted Treasures had shattered, and even if they no longer had any hope.

But they still did not turn around.

The nine Frail Darknesses, who were the nine old men with closed eyes, had their eyes open. White light spread out from them, and the nine old men revealed their cultivation of later stage World Plane Realm. They surrounded the thirteen warships from nine directions and were resisting the Waves of Tears' attacks at full strength.

If these nine people were not around, then the Waves of Tears would have pounced on the thirteen warships a long time ago and submerged them as well as all the cultivators inside.

Yet even so, as the Waves of Tears continued attacking, there were cultivators who died. Their bodies were torn apart by Waves of Tears, and right before the other cultivators, they would be crushed, would have their corpses torn limb from limb, and would be eaten.

These bloody scenes were shocking, and brought a hint of despair to the defenders.

The catwoman had already reached her maximum speed. With it, she circled the thirteen warships, resolving one crisis after another, lessening the pressure on the cultivators with her kills.

They used the warships' power repeatedly, having them burst forth with the pillars of light that could destroy everything... but every single time those pillars of light blasted forth, they could only destroy the fog. They could not harm the bodies of the creatures.

After all, there were too many Waves of Tears. A number of around one hundred thousand something might not sound like a lot, but when someone truly saw it, they would find that there was no end to the creatures.

In the distance were two eighty thousand Waves of Tears. They were roaring, and there was monstrous fog surging from their bodies. That fog was like a corporeal wave that struck in all directions, and before it... were seventeen Xu Huis.

Her face was pale. It was very difficult for her to fight against two powerful existences who were at the equivalent of those in Lunar Kalpa Realm with her power. Even if these

Waves of Tears were ferocious beasts and their divine abilities could not compare to those of cultivators, the pressure brought by them was still incredibly great.

She was at a complete disadvantage. In fact, there were even a few times when the situation had become incredibly dangerous for her. Even if she was holding on for the moment she would not be able to continue for much longer. More importantly... the one hundred thousand feet Wave of Tears was still sitting in a lackadaisical fashion on the gigantic meteor floating in the galaxy. Its eyes were cold, and with a contemptuous and mocking gaze, it swept its gaze past Xu Hui and all the other cultivators.

There were two Waves of Tears that were eighty thousand feet tall by its side as well. If they decided to attack, it would become impossible for Xu Hui to fight against them.

There was anger in her heart. This anger was not directed towards the Waves of Tears... but towards Su Ming, who was currently Dao Kong.

Her impression of Dao Kong had unknowingly changed when Su Ming chose to stay and even took the initiative to charge in, but she had not expected that all of this would be fake. Dao Kong's personality had not changed in the slightest. He was still that unkind, unrighteous, hypocritical, and treacherous person she knew. He might have spewed out impressive and dignified words on the surface, but in truth... when he rushed out, he had used some unknown method to disappear.

She might not have noticed any ripple of power that belonged to Relocation, but there was no other explanation for Dao Kong's disappearance.

Besides anger, Xu Hui also felt a sense of grief and disappointment. She knew that her fate was tied to Dao Kong's, and that she could not break that tie; she was fated to become his wife for dual cultivation. She had attempted to change everything, but could never succeed. She had also tried to change Dao Kong, but failed in that as well.

When she saw Dao Kong having escaped alone, the disappointment in her heart brought anguish and desolation to her pale face.

The cultivators on the thirteen warships were silent. They did not roar or laugh bitterly. Instead, in silence, they used all they had to fight against the Waves of Tears.

As for the nine old Frail Darknesses, no one could know what they thought. However, they occasionally glanced towards the spot in which Su Ming had disappeared and looked somewhat disappointed as well as indecisive.

They were already very tired. While they were not injured in the continuous fights, the usage of their cultivation bases, the torment of their wills, the intimidation from the one hundred thousand feet Wave of Tears in the distance, and most importantly, the despair from no hope were a poison that could kill anyone's willpower.

About an hour had passed since Su Ming had disappeared. During this time, the intensity of the battle had surpassed what happened before and reached a new height.

If no outside force joined in, then perhaps... they could continue fighting and persevering, but the one hundred thousand feet Wave of Tears in the distance seemed to have mocked them enough. It lifted its right hand and swung it. Immediately, the two eighty thousand feet Wave of Tears beside it lifted their heads, and while laughing ferociously, they let out shocking roars and turned into two long arcs... that charged towards the thirteen warships.

Their arrival would mark the end of this hunt.

A hint of calmness appeared in the white eyes of the nine old Frail Darknesses. It was the calmness that would appear in a person who had seen through everything and was about to die. The catwoman trembled. As she laughed bitterly, she prepared herself to die. Instead of living like this, it was better to die, but she would no longer have the chance to make up the regret in her heart.

"Fellow Daoist Xu, we will burn our souls and self-destruct. We will use it to open a path for you to escape. At that time, you must leave quickly..." The voices of the nine old Frail Darknesses echoed in Xu Hui's heart.

"We aren't the only ones who will do it. All the cultivators from Morning Dao Sect and the thirteen warships will also self-destruct to drag them down with us. This should be enough for you to leave this place.

"When you find the young master, don't blame him. He is still a child. He needs experience and time to grow. The nine of us... wish the best for you... Now, we will leave the young master in your hands. He is a little willful, but we hope that you will be more tolerant of him. When you find him, bring him... back to Morning Dao Sect."

Xu Hui's heart trembled. The nine old Frail Darknesses usually ignored her, and she too looked down on these nine cultivators who acted like old slaves. They had practically never communicated with each other, but at that moment, these nine people were determined to use their deaths in exchange for a chance for her to escape.

The two eighty thousand feet Waves of Tears closed in on them swiftly. Mighty pressure descended on the ships with a bang, but at the instant the nine old men prepared to self-destruct, the thirteen warships were about to be destroyed and crumble, and all the cultivators were ready to kill numerous Waves of Tears with their own deaths...

In the spot where Su Ming had disappeared, a ray of piercing white light began to shine. It rose into the heavens out of nowhere, and instantly attracted the attention of all cultivators and Waves of Tears.

It made Xu Hui look over, made then nine old men cast their gazes on it, and also made the four eighty thousand feet tall Waves of Tears peer over with surprise. It even made the one hundred thousand feet tall Wave of Tears focus its gaze on it.

Chapter 916: The Authority in His Commands Could Make Mountains Crumble!

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

“This is...” The nine old Frail Darknesses were momentarily stunned, then whipped their heads towards the place from which the white light came. Needless to say, that spot was where their young master had disappeared, and an idea rose in their heads. Even though they thought it was impossible, they could not help but think about it.

The catwoman was nearby as well. Her pupils constricted, and she trained her gaze towards the place.

Xu Hui was taken aback for a moment, then she frowned. She did not believe that Dao Kong would return. In her mind, he had already run far back.

But the scene that appeared next was one that shocked all the cultivators in the area and left them apprehensive.

At the moment the hundred thousand something Waves of Tears that surrounded the ships saw the white light, the madness and ferociousness on their faces vanished, replaced by terror. Their bodies began to tremble. Their howls might still be echoing in the air, but the roars no longer gave off the feeling that they were fierce. Instead... they sounded like pained wails.

Those wails came from all the hundred thousand something Waves of Tears. As they trembled, they swiftly spread outwards, as if the spot where the piercing white light was coming from was an indescribably terrifying existence to them.

It was the case for Waves of Tears that were one hundred feet tall, and it was the same for those who were one thousand feet tall, and even the four that were ten thousand feet tall. Disbelief appeared on their faces.

Roar!

It was a roar that shook the sky and earth, made the entire galaxy tremble, and even shook the hearts of all cultivators, including Xu Hui and the nine old Frail Darknesses, as well made their minds go blank. That roar had come from the mouth of the one hundred thousand feet tall Waves of Tears King sitting on the meteor in the distance.

This was the first time it roared, and as it roared, it stood up on the meteor. Because of the creature's height, it looked like an invincible deity. This alone was enough to shock and intimidate everyone who saw it.

Yet at that moment, there was a grim look that had never appeared before on its face.

The ten thousand something Waves of Tears forced themselves to stop running away once they heard their king's roar. With trembling bodies, they froze in the galaxy and looked at the white light, which was getting increasingly more piercing to the eyes.

This scene shocked Xu Hui, the nine old Frail Darknessees, and all the cultivators on the ships. All of them had a feeling that something bad was about to happen.

The thought that the white light was Su Ming, which existed in the nine old Frail Darknessees' minds, disappeared at that instant. They were almost certain that the white light was a ferocious beast even stronger than the Waves of Tears!

A feeling of anguish instantly rose in the people's hearts.

At that moment, in the white light that was gradually increasing in size, a shadow slowly took form, but the outline of that shadow did not belong to a ferocious beast. It belonged... to a person!

Once that outline took shape, wails filled with pain rose loudly from all around the ships. Those wails came from the uncontrollable terror within the one hundred thousand something Waves of Tears. Those that were one thousand feet tall were in a slightly better condition, but those that were only one hundred feet tall started fleeing swiftly as they cried out as if they had gone mad.

For a short period of time, the Waves of Tears in the galaxy fell into chaos.

Roar!

The one hundred thousand feet Wave of Tears roared again, forcing the fleeing Waves of Tears to stop in their tracks, albeit with great difficulty, but during that moment, a cold harrumph came from the shadow in the light.

That cold harrumph echoed in the air. When it landed in the cultivators' ears, it did nothing to them, but when it landed in the ears of Waves of Tears, it sounded like thunderous booms. Immediately, one hundred feet tall Waves of Tears let out shrill screams, and ignoring the will of their king, they scattered without any hesitation.

It was at this moment that the person walked out completely from the white light. He was dressed in a Sacred Constellation Robe, and his long hair spilled over his shoulders. His handsome face, slender body, and the hint of a cold smirk on his lips brought a thick, malicious air about him.

“Young master!”

“It’s the young master! The young master returned!”

“Greetings, young master!”

At the instant Su Ming appeared, the cultivators from the thirteen warships were filled with enthusiasm after being momentarily stunned. It was as if all their fatigue was swept away at that instant. As voices greeting him reverberated in the air, the nine old Frail Darknasses cast deep looks at him and wrapped their fists in their palms as they bowed to him.

They did not ask why he chose to return, but when they saw their young master once again in this place, they could not help but feel respect.

The catwoman was completely stunned. Similar to Xu Hui felt, she had not expected that Su Ming would return.

“I said before that I won’t leave. And if I have to leave, I will take all of you... with me,” Su Ming said calmly, then turned his head around to sweep his gaze across the hundred thousand something howling Waves of Tears, who were in an extreme state of chaos.

His gaze was filled with a mighty pressure. The cultivators would not be able to sense it too deeply, but once the hundred thousand something Waves of Tears saw him and felt his gaze on them, they wailed even more loudly and dispersed even faster than before.

It was as if Su Ming’s existence was a source of terror. It was something the cultivators from Morning Dao Sect could not understand, but something Su Ming knew well.

He had killed hundreds of thousands of Waves of Tears, and a presence that only Waves of Tears could detect had naturally formed about his body. This presence was a murderous aura that could make the creatures tremble.

Su Ming’s gaze had made the Waves of Tears become even more terrified because when he looked towards them, they would have a false impression of being dismembered. It was as if the structure of their bodies, how much flesh and blood they possessed, how their bones were distributed, and how their nerves lay in their bodies were all laid bare in front of him at the instant he looked at them.

In fact, they even had the impression that the parts on their bodies which Su Ming had looked at had been injured before or became the most fragile parts.

The presence he possessed that was akin to a monstrous murderous aura in their eyes, and the invisible mighty pressure broke their minds!

This situation was akin to a dog butcher in the mortal world running into a dog. If the person had killed hundreds of dogs, then the butcher would possess a murderous aura that would cause all dogs to quake in fear.

This situation was also similar to meeting great murderers. If someone could personally kill thousands of people, then the killing intent that would gather would be easily noticed by even mortals. Any person who would look upon that murderer would feel a sense of fear, even if they wouldn't know where it came. After all, it would be their spirit sensing it, not mind.

Needless to say, if that person would have killed several hundreds of thousands of people, the feeling would become even stronger. It was no surprise then that Waves of Tears, who were ferocious beasts with extremely high intelligence, were able to notice it even more clearly.

This scene was completely out of the expectations of all cultivators from Morning Dao Sect. Even Xu Hui sucked in a sharp breath. When she looked at Su Ming, she felt that he was unfathomable.

She did not know what he experienced after he disappeared or why he could push Waves of Tears in a state of chaos just by standing still.

The nine old Frail Darknesses also could not come up with a reason for this.

At that moment, a roar that shook the galaxy rang through the area for the third time. The one hundred thousand feet tall Wave of Tears King stood on the meteor and roared at Su Ming. Its face was grim, and there was a brilliant light in its eyes. Its roar was like a wave of sound that rushed out in all directions.

This was a challenge, a challenge issued by Waves of Tears' King!

As it roared, the one hundred feet tall Waves of Tears shuddered. They might still be moving back, but those which were one thousand feet tall and those which were ten thousand feet tall gritted their teeth and bore through the presence that terrified them. They stopped moving back. Instead, they gradually approached Su Ming.

As for the four Waves of Tears that were eighty thousand feet tall, their eyes turned bloodshot, and they charged towards Su Ming while roaring.

At that moment, thousands of Waves of Tears rushed towards Su Ming, and there was not a single one of them that was under one thousand feet tall.

Su Ming smiled coldly. Almost at the instant these Waves of Tears came towards him, he took a step forward. The Duke of Crimson Flame shifted them, and in an instant, Su Ming disappeared. When he reappeared, he was already right beside a Wave of Tears that was one thousand feet tall.

That Wave of Tears shuddered. Before it could do anything though, Su Ming lifted his right hand and pointed to its chest in a well-practiced motion. With smooth movements akin to flowing water, he drew a long line on the Waves of Tears' body, and in the blink of an eye, he drew a circle around the creature.

Then, without even casting it a glance, he walked towards another Wave of Tears.

Behind him, that one thousand feet tall creature shuddered. When it lowered its head, blood trickled out of the corners of its mouth, and its body became limp. The spot where Su Ming had tapped was an old injury it obtained when it was engaged in a fight in the past. The long line he drew sealed off a vein in its body, causing the circulation of blood to freeze for a moment. When this happened, its heart stopped beating, its body fell down, and it died.

This scene caused the pupils of all who saw it to shrink.

One, two, three...

Su Ming moved about, and wherever he went, none of the Waves of Tears could fight back against him. In fact, he did not even use much power on them. He understood the Waves of Tears body structure far too well, and with just one glance, he knew just where their weakness lay.

As Su Ming moved, Waves of Tears died. With their roars growing stronger, the ten thousand feet tall Waves of Tears closed in on him. The creatures that surrounded Su Ming gradually increased in number.

"Still not enough..."

A glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes. He wanted to have Waves of Tears gather around him in an even denser fashion. With a turn, he charged towards those that were one hundred feet tall.

At that moment, the fourth roar from the Waves of Tears' King reverberated in space. The will contained in that roar caused the one hundred feet tall Waves of Tear to descend into a frenzied state as they shivered. Then, as if they had been forced into a corner, they no longer retreated, but charged towards Su Ming while screeching as if they had gone mad.

It might seem as if Su Ming was in danger, surrounded by multiple layers of Waves of Tears, but all of this was precisely what he wanted. That roar from the one hundred thousand feet tall Waves of Tears had actually been a great help to Su Ming.

At that moment, the kind left the meteor for the first time. By just taking one step forward with its gigantic body, it appeared in the area just beyond Su Ming and joined the

Waves of Tears. Clearly, Su Ming's return had not only terrified the normal Waves of Tear, but also brought a mighty pressure to their king.

The creature's great offensive ability that was equivalent to monsters in Solar Kalpa Realm caused the galaxy to rumble, and ripples spread out. A matchless power swiftly descended in the area, intending to crush Su Ming straightaway!

He smiled.

When he turned around to look at the one hundred thousand feet Wave of Tears, he lifted his left hand and seized the space beside him. Immediately, a one thousand feet tall Wave of Tears was caught by its neck. Su Ming might have been incredibly tiny compared to it, but this did not stop him from seizing the beast by its neck. Because of this action, the Wave of Tears instinctively opened its mouth.

Su Ming's smile was cold and sinister. With a malicious air about him, he shook his right hand... and a medicinal core appeared on his palm. Then... he pushed it into the Wave of Tears' mouth!

It was... the Core of Waves of Tears which Su Ming had prepared for countless years and had managed to produce after testing out around eighty thousand formulas and experimented with hundreds upon thousands of Waves of Tears! The core... that could destroy an entire race!

Chapter 917: Either You Worship Me, or You Die

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

Once the core entered the creature's mouth, Su Ming tapped a few spots on the Wave of Tears' body with his right hand, causing the Core of Waves of Tears in its body to melt instantly. Then, Su Ming seized the Wave of Tears' neck, and with a turn, he flung the creature straight into the troop of Waves of Tears beside him.

The one thousand feet Wave of Tears' entire body instantly turned red. Veins popped up on its skin, and blood gushed out of its eyes, ears, nose, and mouth. It looked incredibly terrifying, as if all its bones, flesh, blood, and nerves had melted.

A freezing glare shone in Su Ming's eyes. In the face of endless Waves of Tears that roared and charged towards him, in the face of four gigantic Waves of Tears that were eighty thousand feet big, and in the face of the Waves of Tears King that was one hundred thousand feet big, he smiled.

The moment the smile appeared on his face, he lifted his right hand. He first closed his fingers together, then spread them apart, and softly said a single word, "Bang!"

A muffled bang came from the one thousand feet Wave of Tears. That sound overlapped with Su Ming's voice, as if it had triggered the explosion.

With that bang, the one thousand feet Wave of Tears which had swallowed the Core of Waves of Tears exploded. The impact spread through the entire area, but there were no bones, no torn pieces of flesh, no ripped up body. The creature simply exploded in a rain of blood.

It was as if at the moment its body exploded, everything within it melted. The layer of skin enveloped everything that was inside the body, like a sack containing water. Then, when that sack was torn open, the blood inside gushed out in all directions.

There were plenty of Waves of Tears around the spot where the one thousand feet Wave of Tears had been. At the instant its body exploded, its blood spilled on a dozen something other creatures.

The rain of blood might have looked normal, but at the instant it landed on the Waves of Tears, shrill screams of pain instantly came from those dozens Waves of Tears. The cultivators on the ships saw the blood that spilled out seeping into the Waves of Tears' skin as if it was corroding through, making it seem as if it possessed some form of sentience. Then, it entered deep within their bodies, fusing together with their blood.

At the instant it entered their veins...

Bang. Bang. Bang...

The dozen something bangs that rose and fell were so loud that all the cultivators on the ships trembled, the nine old Frail Darknesses widened their eyes in shock, and the catwoman froze her face turning pale from disbelief.

Even Xu Hui's breathing quickened. She could hardly believe what she saw at that moment.

As the bodies of the dozen something creatures crumbled, the cultivators saw Waves of Tears exploding in all directions, as if a raging and roaring sea of blood had been called out.

As more creatures exploded, the abnormal blood spilled on hundreds of other Waves of Tears. One of them was a creature that was eighty thousand feet big.

The cold smile on Su Ming's lips grew colder. He placed his hands behind his back as he stood in the middle of the disintegrating sea of blood. The blood that could kill Waves of Tears so easily had no effect on him. His cold smile and calmness were in deep contrast to the miserable situation around him that was filled with terror-born madness.

“If you want to take what doesn’t belong to you, then you must be prepared to be exterminated,” Su Ming said flatly.

The hundreds of Waves of Tears screamed in pain, and their cries shook the universe. Their bodies exploded with a bang, while as for the Wave of Tears that was eighty thousand feet big, it roared, and with an indescribable pain, it charged towards Su Ming.

It was clearly enduring the pain of collapsing because it wanted to kill his oppressor.

Su Ming did not move. He believed in the race exterminating Decaying Spirit Core he had created, so he watched the incoming eighty thousand feet Wave of Tears with an aloof gaze. That creature took one more step forward, got slightly closer to Su Ming, and then its body exploded with a bang.

Its death sounded like a funeral bell that resounded through the entire galaxy. Due to its gigantic body, the blood it spilled far surpassed the amount from the much smaller creatures. Once the creature exploded, a tremendous sea of blood submerged Su Ming’s body and swept through the entire area.

Shrill roars filled with terror and madness instantly came from the Waves of Tears’ mouths. The battle spirit that had been lit after much difficulty by the Waves of Tears’ King disappeared like the wind at that instant. The threat of death caused the Waves of Tears to scatter outwards without regard for anything. They wanted to leave this place. They... were afraid.

However, Su Ming’s Decaying Spirit Core for the Waves of Tears was an item to exterminate an entire race. The longer it stayed in effect, the more shocking it would be. The explosion of the hundreds of Waves of Tears and the blood from the eighty thousand feet Wave of Tears gushing out resulted in ten thousand Waves of Tears being splashed.

Once the first bang from the Wave of Tears that was fed the medicinal core sounded, that noise never stopped. Loud rumbles continued reverberating in space, and every single time it rang out, endless screams of pain would follow after, along with another Wave of Tears turning into power for Decaying Spirit Core.

It was a medicinal core that could exterminate a race, decaying its spirit; a medicinal core that possessed the power to destroy all manner of lives. This... was Decaying Spirit Core.

The sea of blood turned into a gigantic whirlpool that continued spreading out while booming sounds echoed one after another. If anyone tried to paint this scene in the galaxy as a picture, then anyone who saw it would be able to see blood-red flowers at the edges of the sea of blood in the middle of a picture, and this was where the booms were coming from ceaselessly.

Each of the blood-red flowers was caused by a Wave of Tears' body falling apart. This picture was incredibly beautiful, but it was also a funeral song for all lives...

The one hundred thousand feet Wave of Tears King roared while retreating hastily. There was a frenzied expression on its face, and its eyes were bloodshot. It could only watch as its kind died in a forlorn manner, as three of the four old eighty thousand feet tall Waves of Tears, the elders of its race, were killed.

Their deaths were completely unrelated to their levels of cultivation. It was because of that sea of blood, because that damn cultivator had fed a medicinal core to one of its own just moments ago. The king did not know what medicinal core it had been, but the terror it produced was something even the Waves of Tears' King could not fight against.

It did not dare get close to it, did not even dare to let a single drop of that blood touch it. It... had a strong hunch that even if it was the Waves of Tears' King itself, its body would disintegrate just like those of everyone else.

This had nothing to do with their levels of cultivation. It was simply something that could not exist together with them. This was... a flaw in their lives!

The booming sounds continued while spreading outwards. The numbers of dead Waves of Tears reached thousands, then tens of thousands, and kept increasing until the entire galaxy was covered by the sea of blood. At that point, about a hundred thousand Waves of Tears had died.

The remnants stood at the outermost area of the galaxy, and most of them were only a hundred something feet big. Few of them were one thousand feet tall. As for the ten thousand feet tall Waves of Tears who were the closest to Su Ming earlier since they were the fastest, all of them had died. Even of the four old eighty thousand feet Waves of Tears, only one remained, and it was trembling after having escaped by pure luck.

If anyone looked around the galaxy at that moment, they would find that most of the hundred thousand something Waves of Tears had disintegrated. Right then, there were less than twenty thousand of them remaining.

The area was filled with dead silence...

All the cultivators from Morning Dao Sect were shocked by all that they saw. Their mouths hung open in astonishment as they looked at Su Ming in the vast sea of blood in a daze.

The Waves of Tears were all trembling. Expressions of terror and despair that had never appeared on them before showed up. As Su Ming stood in the sea of blood, he became an existence that was etched into the deepest parts of these creatures' minds, and his figure was branded deep into their lives and souls, to be passed down generation after generation.

“Either you worship me and... leave, or all Waves of Tears will die,” Su Ming stated flatly as he stood in the sea of blood and swept his gaze past those still alive.

His voice shot through the sea of blood and reverberated in this galaxy.

The Waves of Tears in the area let out pitiful cries begging for their lives as they trembled. Without any hesitation, they bowed down and worshiped Su Ming.

The near twenty thousand Waves of Tears that remained all chose to kowtow to him. When he looked towards the Waves of Tears’ King, an expression of pain and conflict appeared on the creature. After some time, it lowered its head and quietly chose to fold its gigantic body to kowtow as well.

The act of bowing down and worshiping someone might seem simple, but to this creature, it was an act that was even more difficult to endure than death. However... if it did not do this, what else could it do? For its kind and the members of its race, it had no choice.

Everything that had happened was because... its kind had offended someone they could not offend. They brought upon themselves a disaster they could not resolve. When the creature remembered the medicinal core, a shudder ran down its back.

“Now, get yourself out of my sight,” Su Ming said flatly.

The one hundred thousand feet tall Wave of Tears stood up slowly, and with a single move, it charged into the distance. Behind it were the remaining twenty thousand Waves of Tears. They rushed away as fast as they could, following behind their king, as if staying for even a breath longer in this place would break them down.

When Su Ming saw the Waves of Tears leaving into the distance, he shifted his gaze away from them. He did not choose to truly exterminate this race.

He turned around and looked at the people from Morning Dao Sect behind him, and slowly, a faint smile appeared on his lips.

In the sea of blood, he stood dressed in his Sacred Constellation Robe. His long hair danced in space, and his expression was calm, but the sea of blood was acting as the background. With it behind him, a distinct and powerful aura that was full of maliciousness spread out without reservation around his handsome face.

The sea of blood and the malicious aura seemed to have fused together at that instant, and Su Ming’s appearance was deeply branded into the minds of all those from Morning Dao Sect. It was an image they would never forget in their lives.

Su Ming's gaze caused a zealousness to be born within the cultivators from Morning Dao Sect, and deep reverence for Dao Kong rose within them. This was a very different emotion from the one with which they served him before.

They had respected Dao Kong in the past because of Morning Dao Sect, but at this moment... they held Su Ming in reverence because of Su Ming himself.

There was a slightly complicated look on Xu Hui's face. When Su Ming looked towards her, for the first time ever, she instinctively wanted to avoid his gaze...

"Let's go. We'll continue... heading to Divine Essence Star Ocean," Su Ming said calmly.

"Understood!" a single voice that consisted of hundreds of voices from all the fearless warriors, all the cultivators from Morning Dao Sect... the nine old men, the catwoman answered. That word even echoed in the heart of Xu Hui.

Chapter 918: Digging Holes...

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

"He's putting on airs! He's so good at putting on airs!"

The thirteen warships charged forward in the galaxy. Within the biggest warship was the bald crane. It had an envious expression on its face as it mumbled to itself ceaselessly.

"Gosh, darn it, this sort of act of putting on airs should be done by me, haih..."

The bald crane looked dejected. By its side, the Abyss Dragon rolled its eyes. It really did not want to strike the bald crane's ego and point out that the bald crane had been so scared that it did not dare to get out of the room when the Waves of Tears had attacked a few days ago.

"Think about it. Me, the handsome and elegant bald crane, standing in the sea of blood that surges into heavens, bathing in it. With a swing of my wing, I would wash my back, and one hundred thousand Waves of Tears would die. With another swing of my wing, I would wash my chest, and the remaining Waves of Tears would bow down to worship me. Tsk tsk, he's so pretentious!

"Now that I think about it, that guy is up to no good. To his left is that catwoman, to his right is that girl, behind him are those nine old coots, and before him are thousands of fearless warriors..." The bald crane ground its teeth in vexation, looking incredibly jealous.

"If I had that, I would definitely ask them to bring out all their crystals, but what did he do, huh? He did not even mention the crystals! This... This is just... This is so... He's so prodigal, so shameless, so wasteful!"

"This won't do, I have to go to him and talk some sense into him. Abyss Dragon, don't stop me, I must go!" The bald crane's eyes were red. In its anger, it was about to walk out of its room, but after just taking a few steps, it looked at the Abyss Dragon lying on the ground.

"Don't stop me!"

"I'm not stopping you." The Abyss Dragon sighed and quickly moved back, looking incredibly innocent.

"Urgh... Ah, fine, you're right, I shouldn't be so petty. I'll let this slide." The bald crane's eyes moved about shiftily before it quickly sat down, acting very generous.

"What did I say?" The Abyss Dragon was momentarily stunned. and it scratched its head.

"Hmm? Didn't you say that you didn't want me to go?"

"Huh? I didn't say that."

"You said..."

"I really didn't say..."

An intense debate immediately unfolded between the dragon and the crane in the room. No one else could hear their voices, but Su Ming, who was sitting not too far away on the warship's floorboard, could hear everything clearly due to the connection he had with the bald crane.

He did not bother with the two creatures, though. Instead, he lowered his head and touched his chest. Even though the black stone fragment was not there anymore, Su Ming was too used to its existence. It might be in his soul, but he still instinctively thought that it was hanging around his neck.

The scene several days ago emerged in Su Ming's head. Once the Waves of Tears left and Su Ming walked out of the vast sea of blood, it surged towards him and disappeared without a trace around him.

But Su Ming could sense that the sea of blood had not vanished. Instead... it had been absorbed by the black stone fragment.

"Seed of Life Extermination..."

Su Ming closed his eyes. After a long while, when he opened them again, he put down the hand that had been on his chest. Su Ming could guess a little about the matter regarding the Seed of Life Extermination, his Ecang clone, and the bald crane, but not everything.

However, this was not the time for him to verify his guesses. He wanted to go to Divine Essence Star Ocean to search for Lie Shan Xiu. If he could find him, then it would be good, but if he could not obtain any clues, then Su Ming... was prepared... to leave the Barren Lands of Divine Essence with Morning Dao Sect!

He wanted to leave this place and return to True Morning Dao World, then return to his homeland!

In fact, he had already made a certain decision. If he could go back to True Morning Dao World, he was going to use a different method to take revenge on the entire True Morning Dao World than what he had planned while among the Berserkers. He was not going to fight against those people head on... but would instead replace them in the dark!

'I'll become the strongest of all those in the Dao Family in Morning Dao Sect and slowly take control of Morning Dao Sect... and I will continue doing so until I control the entire True Morning Dao World. I'll become True Morning Dao World's Kalpa Lord. I'll become Dao Chen!

'At that time, it won't matter whether it'll be the Immortals or the wills from Yin Death Region—all of them will be reduced to ashes. Only by doing so will Di Tian not be able to notice me, and I will... be able to retrieve my physical body!' A brilliant light shone in Su Ming's eyes, and a hint of a cold smile appeared on his lips.

He was no longer the ignorant teenager from the past. It could be said that he was already a calculative and farsighted person.

Di Tian would definitely not be able to think of this method!

Su Ming looked around him. All the cultivators in the thirteen warships were his subordinates. They had held Dao Kong in reverence in the past, and it was the same now, but Su Ming was Dao Kong now. Because of this, these people had become his subordinates!

And due to the matter with the Waves of Tears earlier, Su Ming could sense that while these people still treated him the same as before, a hint of jealousy appeared in their eyes.

This jealousy was not because of Morning Dao Sect, but because of Su Ming himself!

In fact, while the nine old Frail Darknesses still had the same expressions as before and did not seem that different from before, Su Ming could sense from a few subtle hints that a barely noticeable hint of respect had appeared within the nine old men, and along with it was also... a hint of joy akin to that of the older generation seeing those in the younger generation growing up to be mature and powerful.

Aside from these people, the catwoman had also changed. But the one who changed the most was Xu Hui. She no longer hid herself in space, but was on another warship. Occasionally, she would cast her gaze on Su Ming.

She was hesitant, filled complicated emotions, as well as feeling an inexplicable surprise.

Su Ming closed his eyes and no longer bothered with his surroundings, but instead went on to sense his own cultivation base. At that moment, he was already in the middle stage of World Plane Realm. As for his physical body, it possessed power equivalent to those in the later stage of World Plane. If he brought out the power of Divine Essence as well, then he could fight against those who had attained completion in World Plane Realm.

If he borrowed the power from his Ecang clone as well or had his Ecang clone personally come to the place to fuse with this clone, then Su Ming's offensive abilities... could allow him to fight against those in Lunar Kalpa Realm and below without a problem. Though he would still not be able to fight against the Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death, he could fight against the old monsters in Solar Kalpa Realm with his Ecang clone.

Su Ming had never dreamed about having this sort of power when he had left the land of Berserkers in the past. Yet now, he had it in his grasp. In silence, Su Ming touched his storage bag. In it was the Divine Essence Treasure Peace Arrives When the Elephant is Here, along with Dao Avenue Mountain, which he could activate fully. These would be his killing moves.

More importantly, he had the poisonous wasp! The God Ascension Nectar in the poisonous wasp was a source for Su Ming's level of cultivation to continue rising nonstop. When he thought of this, he lowered his head to look at his right index finger.

The might not seem to anything unusual about it, but Su Ming knew that God Ascension Nectar was contained in that fingertip. In the end, he had decided to keep that God Ascension Nectar.

Even though it would attract danger to him, as long as he controlled it and not let it spread outwards, he could avoid danger, especially when there were thirteen screens of light around where he sat. This was the protection provided to him by the thirteen warships. Along with Su Ming's own power and seals, he could make it so that the fragrance from the God Ascension Nectar did not spread outwards.

When he tried to continue melting the God Ascension Nectar, Su Ming also gained a complete version of Dao Kong's memories. He found the peculiarities surrounding the Sacred Constellation Robe and the method to use it.

The Sacred Constellation Robe was something that only the direct descendants of the Dao Family in Morning Dao Sect could possess, so there was bound to be something about it that made it strong. Due to Su Ming's continuous efforts to understand it over the past few days and Dao Kong's memories, he had gained mastery over the robe.

'The more people I enslave, the stronger the might of the Sacred Constellation Robe will become, and based on Dao Kong's Sacred Constellation Robe as well as his memories, he had nearly a hundred thousand retainers in Morning Dao Sect.

'These one hundred thousand retainers have outstanding power. He also has four main guards. Each of them is at the later stage of World Plane Realm, but due to the unique structure of the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, they could not come with Dao Kong, which was why they were made to stay outside.' Su Ming touched the robe with his right hand, and a smile flashed on his face.

'There are three main functions within Sacred Constellation Robes. One of them is to protect. Their wearers can stimulate the protective power inside, and different Sacred Constellation Robes have different strengths. Dao Kong's Sacred Constellation Robe can resist one full-power strike from a cultivator in Lunar Kalpa Realm!

'This alone makes this robe much stronger than the one I obtained from that Dao Yuan, whom I killed in the past. That robe couldn't even allow me to resist against the three old men sealed in my soul, which shows just how weak it was.' The scene from that year emerged in Su Ming's mind. Now that he thought back on it, the three men sealed in his soul should have been existences like the Duke of Crimson Flame.

'The second is to seal divine abilities. One of the main reasons behind why Sacred Constellation Robes are so powerful is this. They can seal off other people's divine abilities and allow the wearer to figure them out. But if the wearer wants to execute an Art, then he would need enough power and enough retainers to stimulate him to cast it.

'As for the third function, it is... to allow the wearer to turn into a star! But to do this, they need to burn their servants' souls. Once a person turns into a star, they can control the Essence of a World. Even when in the face of someone in Solar Kalpa Realm, they would be able to resist a full-power strike from them, albeit with much difficulty.

'And as a Sacred Constellation Robe becomes stronger, it should be able to allow the wearer to turn into a star cluster. If that is the case, then the wearer would become powerful enough to shock those in Solar Kalpa Realm.

‘It’s a pity that turning into a star isn’t that easy. This Sacred Constellation Robe hasn’t reached that level. Right now, this robe... is only a fourth-tier Constellation Robe. It’s still far from reaching the ninth-tier.

‘Also, based on Dao Kong’s memories, if a Sacred Constellation Robe reaches the ninth-tier, then other hidden divine abilities would be revealed. Its color would even change to silver. In his memories, the ancient existences among the direct descendants of the Dao Family had silver robes.

‘As for those in his generation, no one had managed to make their robes turn silver before he left for the Barren Lands of Divine Essence.’ Su Ming rubbed the center of his brows and closed his eyes. He started meditating quietly and exercising his breathing.

Time trickled by slowly. The thirteen warships’ travel was rather smooth. They no longer ran into existences like the Waves of Tears. And even if they did occasionally run into some scattered ferocious beasts that did not travel in groups, they would either avoid them or kill them. Their journey could be considered to be a smooth-sailing one.

Until three months later...

Su Ming and his group finally reached the periphery of Divine Essence Star Ocean. An innumerable amount of meteors were floating around there, and it could even be said that they surrounded the entire galaxy. This was a landmark. Once they stepped in, it would mean that they had... stepped into the periphery of Divine Essence Star Ocean.

Bang, bang. Bang, bang.

When the thirteen warships approached the meteors, they immediately heard a noise. There was a regular pattern to the sound, and the interval between each one was almost exactly the same.

Su Ming had already opened his eyes a long time ago. Along with him, almost all the other cultivators on the ships saw a thin and frail man crouched down on one of the meteors not too far into the distance. With an apathetic expression, he was digging a hole at a regular rhythm.

When they looked at his surroundings, they found that there were already seven giant holes around him. There were plenty of crushed stones floating about, making it clear that these holes had been all dug by the man.

Chapter 919: The Person on the Giant!

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

The man was not tall. At first glance, he looked like a child that had not grown fully, but when someone looked closely, they would be able to see based on the outline of his face that he was already a grown man.

It was not to say that this person was short, but it was because he was thin and frail, as if a gust of wind would be enough to blow him away.

The thin man did not even spare a glance at Su Ming and the others on the thirteen warships. His attention was trained completely on the meteor as he continued to dig a hole with his right hand.

Banging sounds continued reverberating in the air. This scene caused all those who saw it to be unable to help themselves but feel that there was something strange about this sight.

Su Ming's gaze landed on the thin man as he remained seated on the warship. Even though it was just a brief glance, at the instant he looked over, he sensed the ripple of power coming from that man's body.

That was not... the ripple of power from a cultivator, but was instead a ripple of power Su Ming was familiar with and had even seen before - the ripple of power from a Shaman!

This was a Shaman!

A Battle Shaman!

Su Ming narrowed his eyes and lifted his right hand to swing it in the air. The thirteen warships immediately started slowing down, until they stopped completely. For a time, they remained beyond the group of meteors around Divine Essence Star Ocean, staying still in a spot not too far from the meteor with the thin man.

From the start till the current moment, the thin man did not look at Su Ming and the others. He continued digging that hole until approximately the time takes for an incense stick to burn had passed. When he finished digging a deep hole with his hand, the total number of holes around him numbered eight.

His action aroused curiosity in the cultivators from Morning Dao Sect. While they were looking over, Su Ming shook his head. The ripples of power that belonged to a Shaman were mixed, having a presence of other races as well. The thin man was not a pure Shaman.

"Ignore him. Let's go," Su Ming said flatly.

Once he spoke, the thirteen warships immediately started moving again. As they approached the place and entered the group of meteors, a strange, shrill cry suddenly

rose up from the depths of the group of meteors and turned into a wave of sound that surged towards them.

Along with the wave of sound were nine long arcs. These nine long arcs traveled at an incredibly fast pace. They weaved in and out of the meteors and closed in on the meteor with the nine holes within an instant to stand in front of the thin man.

The long arcs faded away, and nine men with messy hair appeared. Their clothes were distinctly different from those of other cultivators and seemed to be long robes made out of hides. There were also plenty of colors on the nine people's face, preventing others from seeing their faces clearly. Only a ferocious totem drawn there could be seen distinctly.

This totem was drawn with red and white paint. With their shining, chilling eyes, the nine men gave off an incredibly dangerous feeling.

Their ages could not be determined. The only thing that could be seen was that there were no women among them. The person standing in the lead held a thick, black bone staff in his hand. Judging by the looks of it, that bone staff was the leg bone of some ferocious beast.

There were red threads intersecting with each other on that staff, and they shone with a strange, enchanting light.

The appearance of the nine people instantly caused a primitive and violent presence to charge towards those from Morning Dao Sect.

"Gallopers. This race lives at the periphery of Divine Essence Star Ocean. They are a normal race, and they have about a thousand members. All Gallopers love fighting and are incredibly fierce. They do not have much connection to the world outside. In Black Ink Planet's records, this race is considered an uncivilized race," the catwoman next to Su Ming immediately whispered softly.

Almost at the instant she said these words into Su Ming's ears, the nine Gallopers roared towards the heavens together. The freezing glare in their eyes grew brighter. They first looked at Su Ming and the crowd before swiftly charging towards the thin man from nine directions.

"I missed one..." a cold and apathetic voice said. The thin man lifted his head and veins popped up on his right hand. With a roar, an eerie, chilling glare shone on his teeth. During that instant, his teeth changed and became much sharper.

He brought out an herb from his bosom and chewed it, then bent down to pick up a stone he had dug out when he was digging the holes. With a single step, he charged towards the nine people.

A glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes, and a slight hint of interest appeared in them. He was not interested in the man, but the herb he was chewing on. Su Ming's knowledge towards medicinal herbs allowed him to tell at first glance that that herb was not used to cure injuries, but contained a form of poison.

But that interest was not great and could not make him pay any further attention. The thirteen warships continued moving forward and gradually moved past the meteor.

Just as they were about to leave into the distance, the thin man let out a roar and crashed into one of the Galloping Fighters. With a loud bang, his chest was injured badly, but he let out a ferocious smile, completely unbothered by it, then rammed his head against the Galloping Fighter's forehead. He opened his mouth wide and bit down on the person's throat. With a yank, blood gushed out all over the place, and the man instantly retreated.

A shrill scream of pain reverberated in the air, and the Galloping Fighter who had his throat torn open retreated while pressing a hand to his neck. He might have stopped the blood flow, but he could not stop a black hue from spreading down his skin. This was poison. It came from the thin man's teeth, and it came from that herb used moments before.

'The poison is pretty good.' After seeing all this, Su Ming averted his gaze.

The thin man moved incredibly quickly on the meteor. As he retreated, he turned around swiftly and crushed the stone in his right hand. When it turned into powder and he flung it upwards, he struck his own chest and coughed up a mouthful of blood. The blood and powder fused together and started burning swiftly to turn into a fire bird that charged towards a Galloping Fighter.

At the same time, he roared and rushed towards another person.

Within an instant, screams of pain reverberated in the air, and another two Galloping Fighters died under the thin man's hands. When he attacked, his actions were filled with madness and bloodthirst. Every single part of his body could turn into a murderous weapon.

However, when four of the nine Galloping Fighters had died, a dark glint shone in the eyes of the member of the alien race with the bone staff. He opened his mouth and bit down on his bone staff, and with a loud crunch, he crushed a small portion of the bone. At the same time he chewed it in his mouth, he lifted the bone staff and pointed at the center of his brows.

As he did so, his body started trembling, and he instantly became thinner. In the blink of an eye, he was reduced to only skin and bones. The red threads on the bone staff started squirming about. Almost at the instant that member of the alien race became emaciated, thick, black fog erupted from the bone staff.

The fog was thick, and when it appeared, it tumbled about before turning into a black snake. As it hissed, it charged towards the thin man.

At that moment, the thirteen warships had already left the area of the meteor, which was also where the group was fighting. The ships entered a group of meteors. Su Ming did not pay attention to the battle and massacre behind him. He could tell that the thin man and the Galloping Fighters did not pay any attention to them, starting a fight to the death in front of their eyes, completely unbothered by their presence.

And since Su Ming did not send an order, all the cultivators on the thirteen warships would not attack. Instead, they only looked at the battle coldly while the ships moved forward.

When the thin man saw the fog snake coming towards him, his pupils shrank, and he swiftly retreated, but the other four Galloping Fighters chased after him with bloodlust and an intent to slaughter him.

A ruthless look appeared in his eyes. He stopped moving, then instead of retreating, he turned around, and charged straight towards the four people.

Both sides instantly crashed into each other, and booming sounds echoed in the air, along with screams of pain. One of the four had his neck twisted; another had his heart dug out; yet another had his body torn apart; while the last one had his skull shattered when the thin man rammed his head against it. In the blink of an eye, the four Galloping Fighters had all died wretched and miserable deaths.

The thin man staggered. His right hand was paralysed. There was a wound on his abdomen, and blood was pouring out continuously from it.

However, he did not spare a single glance to it. He was about to rush towards the Galloping Fighter with the bone staff in his hand when the four people who had died by his feet suddenly opened their eyes. Gray light shone in them.

Almost at the instant the gray hue appeared, the thin man's body trembled, as if a sealing power was traveling out of the eyes of the four dead Galloping Fighters. That power sealed his body, making him unable to move.

The fog snake charged towards him and surrounded his body, biting into it as if it wanted to eat him whole.

The hint of a cold sneer appeared on the lips of the thin Galloping Fighter who was sitting cross-legged on the ground with the bone staff in hand, but the next moment, his expression changed into that of shock.

It was at this moment that Su Ming jolted while on the thirteen warships that had already left into the distance. He stood up swiftly, then turned around to stare at the battlefield on the meteor that was behind him.

His breathing quickened, and he lifted his right hand and swung it in space, causing the thirteen warships to instantly stop in the group of meteors.

A bang shot up in space, and Su Ming saw the fog snake around the thin man shatter into pieces. A gigantic, illusory figure appeared behind him, and it was a giant with thick, black fur.

There was an old man sitting cross-legged on the giant's head. His body was also an illusion, and he was just as indistinct as the giant. But whether it was the giant or the old man, they were both the God of Shamans for the Shamans. After being worshiped for many years, they were similar to the Berserkers' statue of the God of Berserkers when used for divine abilities.

What made Su Ming lose his composure was not the giant, but the old man sitting on its head. During the instant the thin man brought out his God of Shamans, Su Ming sensed a strong familiar feeling. That familiarity caused his heart to tremble. When he saw the old man on the giant's head with his own eyes, he shook.

That old man's face might be indistinct and his body an illusion, but the white robe he wore and the memories Su Ming would never forget in his life were enough to make him tremble.

"Master..." he mumbled. He was the only one who could hear his own voice.

The illusory figure on the giant's head... was Tian Xie Zi!

Chapter 920: Who Is Your Great Patriarch?!

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

Tian Xie Zi, Su Ming's first true Master!

The pillar of the ninth summit, one of the three Great Berserkers in South Morning, whose origins were incredibly mysterious. No one else knew about it, but his disciples knew that their Master had once left Yin Death Region and entered Morning Dao Sect to have one of the Sect Elders be his Master.

He only took in four disciples in his life!

His eldest disciple had the inheritance of the Shamans' Nine Li Tribe and was the Shaman Lord of the current generation. His level of cultivation might not be much, but his will was so strong that he could overturn the world. To become stronger, he did not hesitate to be used by Di Tian, using the other's power to behead himself and turn into Xing Gan!

He brandished the axe in his hand against the skies!

His second disciple took the word 'Hua' as his family name. He was gentle and elegant, but his body was actually the will of a Phantom King. No one could say how long he had lived. He wandered around the world, worshiped by all ghosts. If it was not because the land of Berserkers was too small and he could not get out of Yin Death Vortex, then his future would have been limitless.

His third disciple might seem dumb, but he was the incarnation of the Rune Treasure that sealed Yin Death Region. Before him, all seals and Runes did not seem to exist. He valued his relationships greatly and was skilled in the Art of Dreams. If he could master this Art, he would definitely be able to shock the universe.

His fourth disciple was Su Ming, an Abyss Builder and the young master of the Fifth True World. His body and soul had been separated—his body was in the land of Immortals, while his soul was sent into the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. He was the Fourth God of Berserkers in the land of Berserkers, had an Ecang clone, and possessed a Seed of Life Extermination. He had faced plenty of trails in his life, and had had countless serendipities. His cultivation base clone could enter the core of Morning Dao Sect, and his clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole could become the strongest physical body in the universe. If the day came when his clones and his physical body merged into one, then his strength would be difficult to describe with words.

If a person could have these four people as his disciples, then there was no longer any need to talk about how illustrious he was!

Tian Xie Zi taught Su Ming about the changes of heart and had him search for his own method to clear his mind. He had also opened the path of cultivation for Su Ming and turned his heart into the one it was now, capable of reaching this far!

Su Ming's heart trembled. His whole body was shaking as he looked at the illusory figure on the giant's head. He had not expected that he would be able to find... traces of his Master in Divine Essence Star Ocean!

Tian Xie Zi's disappearance was a source of pain among the brothers, and they swore that no matter what, as long as they lived, they would find their Master. Even if their Master was no longer around, they would have the universe bleed to take revenge for him.

Su Ming had come to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence alone. His senior brothers were in True Morning Dao World. They had been separated for a thousand something years, but Su Ming's heart of a disciple of the ninth summit had never changed.

No matter how much time passed, he was someone from the ninth summit. He was Tian Xie Zi's fourth disciple!

'Master...'

A hard to control impulse urged him to move, but he was no longer the teenager that he was in the past. He knew that being reckless would not be of much good to him, since it would reveal his thoughts. Like that, he would gain little success even after putting in a lot of effort to achieve his goal.

He forced down the impulse in his heart and watched the giant roar towards the heavens while the thin man rushed out. He was so quick that he instantly closed in on the Galloping Fighter. Then, he lifted his right hand and hurled a punch.

The bone staff shattered into pieces. The Galloping Fighter coughed up blood, then used some unknown method to fall back, avoiding being killed by a hair's breadth. He charged backwards, towards the thirteen warships.

The thin man went after him without any hesitation.

Cold glares immediately appeared in the eyes of the cultivators in the thirteen warships. Some of them even stood up. The catwoman's eyes focused as well while she stood beside Su Ming.

A mighty pressure immediately spread out from the thirteen warships and locked onto the incoming Galloping Fighter as well as the thin man.

"Let them come." Once Su Ming spoke, the mighty pressure from the thirteen warships instantly dissipated.

"Gebierg! Ic i léane eac t?t dryhtgestréon ..." The incoming Galloping Fighter spoke swiftly to Su Ming and the others, but his words were complicated and difficult to understand, making it completely impossible for them to understand what he said. However, based on his expression and his current condition, he was definitely asking for help.

"He asked us to save him, and he's willing to use their race's treasure to repay us," the catwoman whispered.

Su Ming did not speak, staring at the thin man. He saw the man coughing up blood as he pursued the Galloping Fighter. At that moment, his body turned into blood mist, and his speed increased exponentially. When the Galloping Fighter stepped into one of the

warships, the other caught up to him. Fog shot through the Galloping Fighter's body, and a loud boom reverberated in the air. Blood poured of the Galloping Fighter's eyes, ears, nose, and mouth, and he fell on the warship.

The fog gathered together to turn into the thin man. He glared at the people from Morning Dao Sect fiercely, his body bent like that of a ferocious beast. He slowly retreated, then seized the dead Galloping Fighter. But just as he was about to leave, Su Ming spoke.

"Which Shaman tribe do you belong to and who is your Great Patriarch? "

The other people from Morning Dao Sect could not understand Su Ming's words and were all momentarily stunned. This was the Shamans' language, and Su Ming had learned it when he was among the Shamans in the past.

The thin man was planning to retreat, but when he heard those words, he stopped for a moment, then cast Su Ming a deep glance while standing on another ship. With a single move, he grabbed the corpse and left the ship, then returned to the meteor with the holes he had dug. Once he placed a corpse in each hole, he grabbed the remaining one and pushed it hard against the ground. With just a few moves, he formed a huge hole, and threw the corpse inside it.

Once he threw all nine corpses into the holes, he turned his head around and looked at Su Ming on the warship, suddenly lifting his right hand and drawing a line across his neck, signaling that he would kill him if he followed. A freezing glare appeared in his eyes, and he prepared to leave.

Su Ming let out a cold harrumph. His eyes swiftly gained a profound look, and the power of a Soul Catcher spread out rapidly from his eyes, turning into ripples in the galaxy around them. That Soul Catcher's power swiftly descended on the thin man's body when Su Ming looked at him.

The man's feet came to a halt. He whipped his head around, and for the first time, surprise appeared on his face. He lifted his right hand and struck his body to cough up blood. His body turned into blood mist once more, and he changed into a blood shadow. His speed then increased by several fold.

Su Ming took a step forward without any hesitation.

"Continue onward and station yourselves at a safe place. Wait for me there. I have a connection to the ships, I will be able to find you." While speaking, Su Ming had already walked off the ship.

Before the nine old Frail Darknesses could say anything, he said, "None of you are to follow me. That includes you, Xu Hui. This is an order!"

"I can accept not going, but you must bring Xuan Li. She has lived hundreds of years in Divine Essence Star Ocean and understands plenty of customs in the place," Xu Hui said calmly from the other warship.

If they had not gone through the matter with the Waves of Tears, then she would have chosen to ignore Su Ming's orders, even though the others would obey him. Yet now, it was different. His words made even her hesitate for a moment.

"No!" Su Ming stated from afar.

His body turned into a long arc, and he charged into the group of meteors. No one noticed that when he left, the bald crane swung its wings, covering the Abyss Dragon. They turned into dust and left the ship without a single sound, charging in the direction Su Ming had left to go after him.

The nine old Frail Darknesses fell silent and looked at each other. They wanted to chase after Su Ming to protect him, but the resolve in his words was very clear. In silence, they sighed in their hearts, but did not follow after him, because they could already see that Xu Hui had disappeared.

The thirteen ships moved forward slowly while searching for a safe spot in the periphery of Divine Essence Star Ocean so that they could wait for their young master's return.

Su Ming traveled at a relaxed pace through the meteors. He did not use his full speed, but chased after the thin man in front of him from the distance. The statue of the God of Shamans' illusion on the man was a clue that Su Ming was determined to get, since this matter was incredibly important to him. This was the reason why he had decided to chase after the man alone.

After a moment, Su Ming raised his right hand and flung it behind him. Immediately, banging sounds rang out in the space behind him. The big yellow and black dogs appeared beside Su Ming.

The black dog which was the bald crane winked at Su Ming to try to signal to him something, and even wagged its tail, putting on an expression that it wanted to curry favor so that it would be rewarded.

"After him," Su Ming ordered while glaring at the bald crane.

The bald crane quickly nodded, then barked a few times at the thin man's back. With a lightning speed, it rushed forward. The big yellow dog behind it followed after in a lackadaisical manner, occasionally looking into the distance.

The thin man frowned while rushing forward. Killing intent flashed briefly in his eyes, but he did not stop moving. His instincts were telling him that the person chasing after him was the strongest person he had ever met in his life.

He had no confidence in winning against this sort of person. On top of that, the other knew the language of Shamans and knew about the Great Patriarch's title. In fact, he could even find a hint of familiarity that stemmed from Shaman nature about the stranger.

That person's gaze just now had even given him a feeling that he was a Soul Catcher.

When he saw that the other was still chasing after him, the thin man let out a cold harrumph and changed direction to charge straight to his right. As he moved about the meteors, his speed increased.

Su Ming followed after while watching him with a cold gaze. He wanted to see where this man wanted to go, so he was not in a hurry to catch up to him. After all, judging by this man's looks, he would not tell Su Ming the answer he wanted so easily.

Days went by, and in the blink of an eye, half a month was gone.

During it, Su Ming always maintained a set amount of distance between himself and the man, not an inch more, and not an inch less. This distance was enough to make the man feel threatened, and this formed a sense of oppression on the man that lasted continuously for half a month.

Such a thing was enough to break the minds of anyone with a weak will.

Su Ming had been highly adept at this sort of hunting since he was a child, and he had only become even more skilled with it as time went past. Of course, without the bald crane's continuous chatter, the effect would probably have been a bit better.

"Hey, sonny, don't run so fast, let your Grandpa Crane rest awhile..."

"Aw... you're still running! Darn you! You have crystals on you! I can smell them! It's this scent! Don't you dare run!"

"Just you wait, when I catch up to you, I'll have yellow here bite your butt! I'll have it rip your butt off!"

The big yellow dog was already used to the bald crane's quips. It just rolled its eyes and ignored it, but for some unknown reason, it did also have the urge to go up and bite the person's posterior.

1. Hua: Hua is flower, very fitting for Su Ming's second senior brother since he uses flowers.

2. As you can probably tell, the Chinese version was as difficult to understand as the English version. The English version is in Old English, and the Chinese version is made-up, since it's a foreign language in context.

3. As to why it's in modern English. The Chinese version was also in modern Chinese, for ease of reading for all readers. So let's just pretend that we're all very fluent in Berserker and Shaman languages, that's why we instantly understood it while those from Morning Dao Sect couldn't, 'kay?

Chapter 921: Purer

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

Su Ming had a calm look on his face as he moved through the meteors. He occasionally cast a look at the tip of his finger. Hidden in it was the God Ascension Nectar. Without the protection from the thirteen warships, the presence of the God Ascension Nectar could no longer be hidden.

Fortunately, once he chased away the Waves of Tears, Su Ming had ceaselessly melted the nectar when he was in his warship, removing a lot of its presence. It might still be around, but if Su Ming used his power to suppress and seal it, he could reduce it to a bare minimum.

However, if he was to bring out his full power, then he would be unable to avoid having the presence of the God Ascension Nectar spreading out from him. However, the thin man had showed him a clue regarding Tian Xie Zi, so if Su Ming had someone else perform the task of tracking him down, he would feel ill at ease, which was why he had chosen to venture out on his own.

At that moment, he had already chased after the man for half a month, and not a single ferocious beast had been lured to this place because of him, so Su Ming gradually relaxed his guard. He wanted to slowly wear down the thin man's will, and in the end, use a Soul Catcher's Spell on him to find the clues leading to his Master.

This chase that lasted for half a month went on for another three days. After them, Su Ming left the meteors, and what was revealed in front of him was a vast galaxy. There was endless dust around him, and there were even fragments that looked like they had been left behind after a star had shattered.

Broken land, rotting ancient trees, and damaged, grayish black skeletal frames...

The galaxy looked like an ocean, and the broken objects were a part of it.

The galaxy here was not black but had a gray hue to it. Upon first sight, it seemed extremely ancient.

And it was difficult to erase that sensation.

It was ancient, old, with a hint of a primitive and uncivilized air. Dead silent.

It was boundless. Su Ming could not see its end. The darkness in the distance was hidden in the shades of gray. If anyone looked at them for a prolonged period of time, they would be unable to escape a sense of being oppressed, which would make it difficult to even breathe. Their hearts would gradually beat slower, and they would then rot away with the galaxy.

The galaxy was simply too big, which was why even if a living creature appeared, the silence would be hard to break. In the distance was a shattered rock that was several tens of thousands of feet big. On it was a black creature with the body of a snake and the head of a tiger. It was wrapped around the rock, and in its mouth was a ferocious beast in the shape of a dragon slowly being devoured.

The black creature trained its purple eyes on Su Ming, glaring coldly at the unwelcome guest who had walked out of the meteors.

Su Ming looked around him, sensing the ancient presence crashing straight into his face. This was the periphery of Divine Essence Star Ocean. This place... was an area where cultivators rarely came, and it was labelled as a forbidden ground.

In the distance was a gigantic, broken skeletal frame, and there was a person crouching on it. That person was the thin man that Su Ming had chased to this place. He was crouching down on the skeleton and staring at Su Ming with a cold glare.

A scimitar had appeared in the thin man's left hand at some unknown point of time. The blade was gray, and it was made of bone.

The man had his right hand pressed against the skeleton beneath him, and he was tapping the skeleton in a bizarre rhythm with all his fingers. Every single time he tapped it, the color on the skeleton would fade a little.

"Divine Essence Star Ocean..." Su Ming mumbled softly and looked around. He suddenly felt that this place did not give him a sense of unfamiliarity, even though it was the first time he saw it.

It did not mean that he had come to this place at some unknown point in time, but because... the uncivilized, ancient, and primitive air here gave him a sense of déjà vu.

Yin Death Region had the same feeling...

"Hiss!"

A sharp sound swiftly tumbled out of the thin man's mouth. While crouching on the skeleton, he lifted the bone blade horizontally, and when he hissed, the galaxy immediately seemed to have become different.

The broken stones pointed their sharp tips towards Su Ming, and all sorts of poisonous insects that could survive in the galaxy crawled out of the rotting ancient trees during that instant.

The skeletal frames that were floating in the galaxy also seemed to gain some sort of sentience, and a vague, indistinct hostility rose into space. It was one that would not disappear.

The ferocious beast with the body of a snake and the head of a tiger curled around the stone also swallowed the ferocious beast in its mouth in one gulp, and its purple eyes began to shine with animosity.

This was a repulsion. It was the repulsion of the entire Divine Essence Star Ocean against outsiders. This was a power that could not be described with words. If someone said that the entire Divine Essence Star Ocean was a single will, then the aloofness and rejection from this will towards all outsiders would become this force of repulsion.

When outsiders came to this place, they would have to face the hostility from the entire Divine Essence Star Ocean, the galaxy itself and all its life forms. The force of repulsion that was born from this hostility could turn into a curse!

Right then, Su Ming's arrival was like a light being lit in the dark. It might not seem very strange, but in Divine Essence Star Ocean, that light was incredibly clear and did not fit in.

This was the thin man's plan. He had known that when outsiders arrived in Divine Essence Star Ocean, they would be repelled. This force of repulsion did not exist beyond the group of meteors, and neither would it appear among them, but once a person moved past and stepped into the periphery of Divine Essence Star Ocean, it would instantly appear.

With this repulsion, the thin man could win against those who had higher levels of cultivation than he. In fact, with this method, he had already turned several outsiders' heads into his possessions.

At that moment, the thin man's face was cold and dark, but just as he was about to take action...

Su Ming cast him a glance, and their gazes met.

The thin man bared his teeth, and when he did so, a hint of ferociousness was added to his demeanor. But compared to his hostility, Su Ming's face remained calm, and there was even a faint smile on his face. He could sense the force of repulsion in this place and could also guess the thin man's thoughts.

He did not say a single word, but lifted his head, and with his right hand, released the tie binding his hair, letting it fall over his shoulders. Ripples spread out from the Sacred Constellation Robe, and it changed to resemble beast skin.

Su Ming's skin grew tan, and his face was no longer handsome, but gained a determined look. He lifted his right hand and slowly touched his face. Under the thin man's stupefied gaze, Su Ming slowly drew a bloody line between his nose and eyes with his fingernail!

Blood flowed out from the wound. When Su Ming wiped it off... the scar from when he was in the land of Berserkers appeared on his face.

He raised his head.

At the instant he did so, the thin man's expression changed drastically. Disbelief appeared on his face, and this time, that disbelief was even greater than when Su Ming had spoken Shaman language previously.

His body trembled violently, because at that moment, Su Ming... no longer gave him the feeling that he was an outsider. In fact, even his presence changed completely, and he gained... an ancient and uncivilized presence, a primitive air. He gained... a presence that might be slightly different from that of Divine Essence Star Ocean, but it was clearly born of the same source!

This was something he could not understand. It was something out of the boundaries of his knowledge, which made him unable to accept what was happening. In fact, if he had not seen it with his own eyes, he would definitely not believe that this person was an outsider.

It did not matter whether it was his appearance or his presence, for even the aura from his soul gave off a strong feeling that it came from the same source as Divine Essence Star Ocean. This change left the thin man in disbelief.

He remembered seeing outsiders disguising themselves with the unique appearances of the cultivators in Divine Essence Star Ocean, but no matter how similar they looked, how well they spoke the language, the unique presence that came from Divine Essence Star Ocean was something that was impossible for them to possess.

This presence was the key to identifying people that lived here.

Yet the presence about Su Ming was even purer than the thin man's own, who was born in Divine Essence Star Ocean!

The sharp tips of the stones that were aimed towards Su Ming gradually turned downwards, no longer pointing towards him. Instead, they began to drift around the galaxy as usual.

The hostility that came from the poisonous insects that crawled out from the rotting ancient tree disappeared into thin air, too. As long as no one came to provoke them intentionally, they would not venture out. They simply crawled back into the rotten tree and vanished without a trace.

The vague hostility from the broken skeletal frame also disappeared, as if the soul that was gathered there had returned to sleep once more.

As for the ferocious beast that was coiled around the stone, it opened its mouth, and the murderous aura about it dissipated, and the creature's expression became lackadaisical. The beast lay down on the stone and closed its eyes to digest the food in its stomach.

It was as if it felt that the hostility between Su Ming and the thin man was a conflict born within Divine Essence Star Ocean itself. As long as they did not provoke the creature, it would not interfere with their fight.

The force of repulsion from the galaxy was gone without a trace...

The thin man stared intently at Su Ming, then suddenly shouted out his first words to Su Ming, "Which tribe did you come from?!"

His voice was incredibly cold and dark, just like the presence he gave off, and he was also using the Shaman language.

When Su Ming was about to speak, the thin man's eyes suddenly darkened, and he leaped forward swiftly. In an instant, he closed in on Su Ming. The blade of the scimitar in his left hand was pointed outwards and drew forth a freezing glare as he swung the blade at Su Ming's neck.

The blade might have been made of bone, but it traveled so quickly that it produced the sound of air being sliced apart, as if space itself had been cut down. If that blade touched anyone, then even a rather sturdy body would be injured, much less a normal one.

However... when the sharp blade touched Su Ming's neck, there was the sound of metal crashing against metal.

The thin man's expression changed drastically. He turned around without any hesitation and appeared behind Su Ming. He no longer held onto the bone blade in his right hand, but with all five fingers positioned straight, he pushed towards his opponent's back.

"Dark Mountain Tribe." Su Ming did not falter once when he said these words. As he uttered them faintly, he took a step backwards, and his back crashed into the thin man.

With a bang, the thin man coughed up blood, and the bone blade shattered. His right hand trembled, and as his expression changed, he lifted his head and roared.

As he did so, the space around him immediately distorted, and a gigantic illusory shadow manifested behind him.

Pursuit of the Truth #Chapter 922 - Thank You - Read

Pursuit of the Truth Chapter 922 - Thank You

Chapter 922: Thank You

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

When Su Ming looked at the thin man's statue of the God of Shamans at such close proximity, he could see clearly that the giant had black fur and was dressed in coarse hides. A primitive and savage presence radiated off it.

On its messy head was an old man dressed in a black robe, meditating in a sitting position. The black robe covered his face, preventing Su Ming from seeing his appearance, but with just one glance, Su Ming could recognize that the old man was his Master!

However, his Master's robe was black when he appeared with the statue of the God of Shamans this time. It was different from last time, and this made Su Ming think.

Veins popped up on the thin man's body. With a roar, the illusion of the giant behind him swiftly lifted its large hand, clenched it into a fist, and hurled it straight towards Su Ming, sending its fist crashing towards him.

Su Ming took a step forward, and the moment the fist was to come into contact with him, he disappeared. When he reappeared, he was already on the illusory giant's head, right beside the black-robed Tian Xie Zi.

Due to the familiar presence, Su Ming forgot where he was at that instant. He looked at the old man, and even it was just an illusion, Su Ming still treasured the sight before him dearly.

"Master..." He bowed towards the old man in black sitting on the giant's head.

Yet before he could finish bowing, the thin man's roar reached his ears again. A totem appeared on the man's forehead, and it was the picture of a mountain.

Once it appeared, a sharp presence erupted from his body. He charged straight towards Su Ming, and from the distance, he looked as if he had turned into the peak of a mountain. With his whole body, he rushed into his opponent.

Su Ming frowned. As he turned around, he lifted his right hand, but at the instant he was about to strike the man, he saw the totem at the center of his brows. Su Ming's heart trembled furiously, and he pulled back most of the power from the attack he had been about to deliver.

A bang rang out. Su Ming did not move, but the thin man coughed up blood and fell back continuously. There was a hint of puzzlement when he looked at Su Ming. When he retreated swiftly, five wisps of black smoke spread out from his right hand, and once they transformed several times in front of him as if they were forming hand seals, he pointed towards the skeleton he had been crouching on previously.

The skeleton shuddered. Dim flames rose in the broken skull, and as the body shuddered, the skeleton lifted its head. At the same time, the dim flames spread out through the entire body, connecting with each other. Soon, the skeletal beast stood erect in the galaxy.

It was a beast that had possessed wings when it was alive. Once it stood up, skeletal wings spread out on both sides of its body. The dead creature rushed forward, and with an incredible speed, it instantly appeared under the thin man's body. When it had the man on its back, it left into the distance, deep into Divine Essence Star Ocean.

Su Ming stood on the giant with a dazed expression. In his mind, the totem at the center of the thin man's brows resurfaced. That mountain was so incredibly familiar to him. It was... the ninth summit!

Su Ming could not contain the excitement in his heart. If he had still felt slightly skeptical when he saw his Master, then when he saw the ninth summit, he became completely certain. His Master... had definitely come here, and had been here for a very long time, or else it would have been impossible for the ways of a tribe to have been changed!

And there was even a high possibility... that Master was still in Divine Essence Star Ocean!

When Su Ming thought of this, a glint appeared in his eyes, and he swiftly went forward. The bald crane and Abyss Dragon had run off to search for something on the bones while Su Ming had been fighting against the thin man. When they saw him leaving into the distance, they quickly went after him.

Su Ming had the Duke of Crimson Flame perform a shift for him at that moment. He disappeared, and when he reappeared, he was far from where he had previously been and could see the thin man glaring at him intensely from the skeleton not too far away.

"If I wanted to kill you, I wouldn't have let you run so far. I have three questions, if you answer me, I will let you go," Su Ming said calmly.

Uncertainty appeared on the thin man's face. He opened his mouth, about to speak, but then his expression suddenly changed drastically. A vortex appeared in the space behind him, and like a gaping mouth, it swallowed the skeletal beast along with the man.

This happened too suddenly. A focused glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes, but he soon regained his composure. He did not make any move to head forward, but instead sat down cross-legged in the galaxy with a relaxed expression on his face.

Days went by. Three, five, seven... until half a month had gone past.

Su Ming continued sitting there, and there was not the slightest hint of impatience on his face. During the past half a month, everything was quiet around him, and Su Ming did not see a single ferocious beast or anyone else living in Divine Essence Star Ocean passing by.

When three more days went by, at the spot in front of Su Ming where the thin man and the skeletal beast had been devoured half a month ago, a flash of red suddenly appeared, and it instantly charged into the distance.

That flash of red was naturally the thin man. At that moment, his body was surrounded by blood fog, and his expression was incredibly dark. There was indignation on his face. There was also a faint black line there as well.

Su Ming smiled faintly and stood up. With a step forward, he continued chasing after the man.

The other had outstanding intelligence. It did not matter whether it was his act of taking the initiative to attack, keeping the skeletal beast as a reserve, or putting up the act of being devoured half a month ago—they all showed how cunning he was.

However... all of these things were akin to a child fooling around in Su Ming's eyes. With just a glance, he could tell what was going on. This was Divine Essence Star Ocean and the thin man's homeland. While he might not know all the things that lurked around here, he would definitely know most of them.

Besides, Su Ming had not manipulated the direction in which the other fled. The thin man had chosen it himself, and if he had thought to keep the skeletal beast around to aid in his escape, then he had certainly had enough time to choose his path, which was why him being devoured and disappearing was most likely a fraud!

Besides, while the fear on the person's face looked real, Su Ming could still find hints that suggested it was fake based on his vast experience. When he thought about it carefully, he could guess the truth.

That was why Su Ming was not in a hurry. He was certain that the man would not hide for too long. After all...

With the faint smile lingering on his lips, Su Ming said calmly, "If you don't cure yourself of that poison in your body, your injuries will only get worse."

Su Ming's voice fell into the fleeing man's ears, causing his expression to change, but he gritted his teeth and did not turn his head back. As he coughed up blood to boost his speed, he fled even faster.

Su Ming frowned. With a move, he shifted and appeared several hundreds of feet behind the man. But just as he was about to shift again, his pupils shrank, for a powerful sense of danger filled his heart. That sense of danger came from in front of him.

When he looked over, the space over there was calm; there was nothing strange about it. There was not a single piece of stone or dust in the area, but the powerful sense of danger told Su Ming that there was a murderous aura that could threaten him hidden in that tranquil space.

Right then, the sound akin to an old man mumbling echoed in the galaxy. At the instant it resounded, the thin man's footsteps came to an abrupt halt. His expression turned pale, and without any hesitation, he started retreating, but suddenly, an endless amount of ripples appeared out of nowhere next to him.

These ripples covered an area of about several hundreds of thousands of feet. As the ripples spread out, the outline of a creature resembling a gigantic fish formed in the galaxy.

There were nine sharp needles on the fish's back, but its true form could not be seen. They could only see its general outline from the ripples. If someone looked at it from close up, they would not be able to see the outline clearly, but if they looked from the distance, they would be able to see the creature incredibly clearly because, since there were no ripples in the other areas.

This was a gigantic ferocious beast hidden in space.

At that moment, the thin man was right at the beast's mouth. As the ripples spread out, Su Ming saw the ferocious beast open its mouth. The scene from half a month ago repeated itself before Su Ming's eyes with an astonishing similarity.

The thin man's eyes turned bloodshot, and he retreated madly, but his body slowed down, as if there was a power that had gathered on him and was interfering with his movements, making them much slower than before.

Su Ming took a step forward without hesitation. He shifted, and at the instant the ferocious beast was about to devour the man, he appeared right next to him.

He seized the thin man's shoulder, and with a grim expression, he retreated swiftly, but right at the instant he moved back, he noticed that his body seemed to have rotted, as if there were innumerable threads that could not be seen surrounding him, causing his speed to slow down.

The danger was right before his eyes. The ferocious beast's mouth was about to snap shut and devour him. At that moment, glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes. He lifted his left hand and slapped the center of his mouth, and when his hand left the spot between his brows, a ray of white light flew out.

That white light was a white jade that was the size of a palm. Once it flew out, it started expanding right in front of Su Ming.

"Peace Arrives When the Elephant is Here!" Su Ming shouted out.

Countless runic symbols appeared on his body as bumps, the power of his Divine Essence gathered on each one of them. The runic symbols then flew out and fused into the white jade, and the speed of its growth became exponentially faster.

"Malicious Spirit Weighing an Elephant!"

A white elephant appeared in the galaxy, and a shrill trumpet rang out as well. A scale manifested in space, and a huge malicious spirit lifted it up. On one side of the scale was an elephant, and on the other was the ferocious beast hidden in space. The spirit started weighing them.

"It weighs... three maces and seven taels !"

A buzzing came from the malicious spirit's mouth, and a furious roar shot from the ferocious beast whose body was hidden in space. The creature shrank swiftly, and the force from its destruction erupted forth.

With a bang, the galaxy trembled. A powerful impact spread in all directions, and Su Ming was pushed back continuously. With one hand, he grabbed onto the thin man, and with the other, he pointed at the treasure that was Peace Arrives When the Elephant is Here.

Immediately, the malicious spirit disappeared and the elephant vanished, turning back into a white jade the size of a palm before charging back to Su Ming. Once he caught it, sweat broke out at the center of his brows.

Su Ming immediately fled into the distance with the thin man. Behind them, ripples continued spreading out. The ferocious beast hidden in space had not died, and was now letting out roars filled with anger and pain.

The thin man's face was pale, but there was a clear black line that had reached the top of his skull. He cast Su Ming a complicated gaze and said in a low voice. "Thank you..."

1. Maces and taels: Maces and taels are units of measurement shared between eastern countries, though the unit was not standardized until recently. For mace, it's easier, the weight for each mace is approximately around 3.76 to 3.78 grams. For tael though, it has been changed in each country and each dynasty so many times and so drastically that we will just go for the modern version and say it's 50 grams, 'kay?

Maces and taels are usually used to weigh money. I say money because in Ancient China, these units of measurements were usually used to measure silver, the currency used by the public.

So if it's three maces and seven taels, it's probably 361.31 grams.

Why would that creature weigh so light, though? Because it's like a shrinking thing. If you read the chapter again, you will find that the creature shrank before it was destroyed (kind of). So what you saw was the creature being forced to weigh the same as the elephant, and then it got injured because it had its whole mass of who knows how many tons condensed to, well... 361.31 grams.

Chapter 923: Indistinct...

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

Once the thin man said these words, he fell unconscious. There was no longer just one black line on his face, but several of them. As they connected with each other, they formed the outline of a malicious spirit's face, which looked like it was smiling. It was branded on the thin man's face, and it was a dreadful sight.

With the person in hand, Su Ming had the Duke of Crimson Flame shift as he charged forward. With the roars of the creature hidden in space behind him, they quickly left into the distance.

.....

Several days later, the thin and frail man opened his eyes. When he woke up, he found himself lying on a piece of land, which was actually a gigantic stone slab floating in the galaxy. On it were some purplish black plants with presences of rot.

Almost at the instant he opened his eyes, his gaze focused. When he shot up, he lifted his right hand, and a chilling light shone on his palm. Immediately, a new bone blade appeared. With a vigilant look on his face, he looked around him and saw Su Ming sitting on a large stone not too far away. He was looking at the sky with his head lifted.

He was dressed in a sackcloth, and his hair was a mess. His skin was slightly dark, and a primitive, ancient presence surrounded him, refusing to dissipate.

He seemed very young, but hints of an ancient air could always be seen in his expression and gaze.

A complicated look flashed briefly in the thin man's eyes. He looked at Su Ming but did not say a single word.

"You're awake," Su Ming said calmly. He did not look at the man, but continued watching the heavens, the sky without stars, and the unfamiliar scene in the distance.

The thin man hesitated for a moment before he asked in a whisper, "Just who are you?"

"I've gotten rid of the poison in your body, but I cannot heal the injuries you sustained over the years," Su Ming said calmly, not answering the person's question.

The moment the thin man woke up, he had already noticed that the poison in him was gone. When he heard the other's words, he fell silent.

"What is your name?" Su Ming asked faintly.

The thin man remained silent for a moment, but in the end told his name. "Dijiu Mo Sha."

"Dijiu..." Su Ming mumbled and averted his gaze from the sky, turning his head around to look at Dijiu Mo Sha.

"Is your tribe called Ninth Summit?" Su Ming appeared calm, but only he knew that when he mentioned the ninth summit, the memories of happiness buried in time were awakened in his heart.

Dijiu Mo Sha was stunned for a moment. He stared intently at Su Ming and did not say a single word.

Even if he did not answer, Su Ming had already found his answer.

“Is your Patriarch... named Tian Xie Zi?” Su Ming asked once again. His voice was calm, but there was a tone within it that allowed no challenge to his authority. It also contained a might that said the thin man must answer his question.

Dijiu Mo Sha lowered his head and said, “No.”

“No, huh...?” Su Ming looked at the thin man in front of him. This person came from the tribe his Master had formed in Divine Essence Star Ocean. He was already certain of this.

“If he isn’t, then you can leave.” Su Ming shook his head and returned to look at the sky. As he watched the unfamiliar scenes in the distance, an air of desolation surrounded him.

Dijiu Mo Sha was momentarily stunned. He did not expect that this particular existence before him, who looked incredibly powerful and could even fight against that Void Beast, would cure him of the poison in his body once he saved him, and after just asking a few questions, would let him leave.

A glint appeared in his eyes. He stood up slowly, and after a moment of hesitation, he wrapped his fist in his palm to bow to Su Ming. He moved swiftly backwards and left into the distance within an instant, but after moving back about several thousands of feet, he came to a halt and looked at Su Ming again.

“I know that you must have placed some sort of seal on me that will allow you to know my location so that you can follow me from the distance, and from there, know the direction in which I’m headed.

“I can take you to my tribe... but you must promise me to the deity of your race that once I bring you back to my tribe, you will break the seal on me.”

“Very well.” Su Ming turned around and looked at the thin man, nodding.

.....

The galaxy was boundless and vast. As they headed farther into Divine Essence Star Ocean, more drifting objects could be found. Some of them were shattered stones and some dust. All of them would pass by them by in large clusters, bringing a feeling to all those who saw it that this place had once been a very magnificent galaxy.

Su Ming felt it was especially so when he saw a strange looking rock, which left into the distance like a shooting star. That rock... looked like a crack-covered head of a statue. It was hundreds of thousands of feet big, which could tremble the hearts of many

“That was God Luo Mo’s head. It floats in Divine Essence Star Ocean as a symbol of good luck. All those who see it and worship it can receive God Luo Mo’s blessing,” Dijiu

Mo Sha said in a low voice. He stopped in the galaxy, then bent his back and worshiped the head leaving into the distance.

“There are nine of God Luo Mo’s heads in the periphery of Divine Essence Star Ocean. They were enshrined and worshiped in the legendary Luo Mo Temple a long time ago. It’s a pity that during the Great Destruction, they shattered when Luo Mo Temple was destroyed.”

Su Ming looked at the head leaving into the distance. When he could no longer see it, he asked calmly, “How far are we from your tribe?”

Dijiu Mo Sha cast Su Ming a look and said softly, “Once we cross the star ocean, move past a mountain of stars, and walk through a shattered desert, we’ll see my tribe.

“Don’t worry, the members of the tribes in Divine Essence Star Ocean are not as fraudulent as the cultivators in the world outside, where they promise on the surface but will lay traps in the dark aimed against you. Since I promised to take you to my tribe, I won’t harbor any schemes. I also believe that you, who is not rejected by Divine Essence Star Ocean, will obey the principles here.

“Also, the path I’ll take you through might seem a little long, but it is the safest one. We must go around a few primitive tribes and skirt around several habitats that belong to packs of ferocious beasts.” Dijiu Mo Sha moved forward, then turned into a long arc and charged into the distance.

Days passed, and half a month later, Su Ming had already stayed in the periphery of Divine Essence Star Ocean for several months. On this day, a mountain appeared in front of them.

This was the first time Su Ming saw a mountain in the galaxy.

This mountain seemed to be immeasurably tall. Its top could not be seen, and neither could its edge. It was like a gigantic wall that stood erect in the galaxy. This was a mountain that was formed by countless broken stars.

When Su Ming cast his gaze on it, he saw that there were tens of thousands of stars in it. Most of them might be broken, but the shock brought to the hearts of all those who saw the mountain they formed by gathering together was still hard to describe.

As Su Ming looked at that mountain made of stars, it was as if everything before his eyes had gone still.

“Just what sort of divine ability could make so many broken cultivation planets group together to form such an astonishing mountain?” he mumbled.

"No one knows what divine ability it was, nor who used it. But we do have a legend in Divine Essence Star Ocean about it..." Dijiu Mo Sha looked at Su Ming, then cast his gaze on the mountain of stars in the distance.

"It is said that this mountain is a grave, buried within which is a man. His wife destroyed nearly half of Divine Essence Star Ocean to build this grave for him.

"In the legend, that man's wife is a powerful existence that came from outer space during Great Destruction. Once she made this mountain, she turned into a rock to stay beside her lover and keep him company.

"This mountain is also known as Husband Gazing Mountain," Dijiu Mo Sha said softly, then charged forward. Su Ming looked at the gigantic mountain of stars, and Dijiu Mo Sha's words echoed in his ears. In silence, he began walking.

The distance might not have seemed great, but in truth, the mountain was very far away. The two of them only truly arrived at the foot of it after three days, then used half a month to reach the mountainside.

They did not try to move to the peak, but went around.

Some time later, Dijiu Mo Sha turned his head around to look at Su Ming and said in a solemn tone, "No one has managed to reach the top before. At least as far as I know. It's as if there is some sort of power preventing anyone from reaching the summit.

"There are some people who say that the rock that is the woman is at the peak, which is also where her husband's corpse is buried. As long as we do not destroy the mountain rocks here and force our way to the top, then no danger will come to us from the mountain.

"But if anyone dares to damage even a single part of this mountain or repeatedly try to head to the summit... then no one will be able to leave."

Su Ming stood on a broken slope, his head raised to look in the direction of the summit. Everything was a blur there, without any end in sight. It might have been just a figment of his imagination, but he thought he could see a woman standing at the summit, holding a bone xun in her hand. She was playing a song filled with grief, whose notes were mournful whimpers.

"What did you hear?" Su Ming suddenly asked.

Dijiu Mo Sha was momentarily stunned. He listened attentively for some time before looking over with a puzzled expression.

"It's a song." Su Ming closed his eyes. The mournful notes from the xun echoed in his ears, causing ripples in his heart, and dragging out a memory that brought about a similar sense of grief.

"I didn't hear anything. Let's go." Dijiu Mo Sha shook his head and started moving again.

Su Ming opened his eyes and looked at the blurry view at the top of the mountain before following Dijiu Mo Sha into the distance.

The Abyss Dragon and bald crane followed behind him, as usual. The Abyss Dragon's expression remained the same, but the bald crane looked dazed. It had its head lifted up, looking at the top of the mountain. From its eyes...

... tears were falling, and they were rolled down its cheeks.

"Darn it, what's wrong with me...? Why am I crying? Why do I feel so horrid? Why do I want to cry so much...? Damn it all, this feels terrible. I want to cry. I feel unhappy. I feel like I want to die..." the bald crane mumbled, and more tears fell from its eyes.

It followed behind the Abyss Dragon and Su Ming in a daze, with tears continuing to fall, but since it was just a soul, when its tears fell down, they would disappear. They did not fall on the ground nor landed on the mountain. They only fell in its heart and tore multiple holes within it, but no one could see that.

The bald crane's consciousness was a little clouded at that moment. It heard the sorrowful song, and a picture formed in its mind. Within that picture, it saw itself as a crane as great as the universe, with a woman sitting on its back. She was patting its head and speaking softly.

1. Dijiu Mo Sha: Case of lost in translation. Dijiu means ninth, which is why Su Ming immediately knew that Mo Sha was talking about the ninth summit.

Chapter 924: Malicious Sand Spirits

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

Every person has a secret, and every living soul has secrets, which all those who are not of the same species do not know. If no one told a person, they would never learn of them.

Su Ming had his secrets. Dijiu Mo Sha had his secrets. The Abyss Dragon had its secrets, and the bald crane, too, had its own secrets.

Right then, the mountain of stars turned into one of its many secrets.

When Su Ming walked off the mountain and they slowly left into the distant galaxy, the bald crane turned its head around to look at the mountain. It stared at the summit, and its tears seemed to have seeped through its wound-ridden heart to fall on some unknown place.

“Is it worth it...?” the bald crane whispered softly. This was something that rarely came out of its mouth. It did not add in any of its usual adjectives nor called itself ‘Grandpa Crane’.

It left into the distance. The mountain of stars was left behind, and the memories... were left behind, too.

When Su Ming turned his head around, he did not see the bald crane’s tears. He only saw that the bald crane still seemed to be simple-minded, comical, and loved money as much as its own life.

It was just like how no one could see the tears of fish, because they lived in water. No one could differentiate what was water, and what was their salty tears.

“Bald crane, why does it feel as if there’s something off about you?” the big yellow dog that was the Abyss Dragon asked in a low whisper.

“How could anything be off about this Grandpa Crane? I was just thinking. Say, do you think there is a crystal mine in that mountain of stars?” The bald crane turned its head around and looked towards that mountain of stars once more. The Abyss Dragon did not see the hint of grief and absent-mindedness on its face when it did so.

.....

Another month went by. They moved past the star ocean, went around the mountain of stars, and what was revealed in front of Su Ming’s eyes was a boundless desert, which was the same as the mountain of stars. It floated in the galaxy, looking like a large piece of land.

That desert was formed from dust, which came from shattered planets and stones that had crumbled apart. All that dust had been gathered together by some sort of force and formed a desert whose end could not be seen.

Moaning wind blew past the desert, lifting sand off the ground. It also stirred up sandstorms. Wherever it went, countless sand dragons would tumble about and roar, forming a ghastly sight.

“Once we pass this shattered desert, we will be able to see my tribe. Relatively speaking, this is also... the most dangerous part of our journey. After the Great Destruction, the God of Sand Earthlings cast a great divine ability before he fell asleep

and sent it sweeping through the periphery of Divine Essence Star Ocean to gather all the dust after the planets had shattered.

“That action of his created this desert of dust. It acts as a natural barrier and a place for Sand Earthlings to rest and grow, since all of them are male and they are spirits that are born from sand.

“Most Sand Earthlings are short. They do not possess much offensive abilities and do not have any power. They are very weak... but if a race can survive in Divine Essence Star Ocean, then they’re not that simple. If there is something about them that is incredibly weak, then there is also something about them that is incredibly strong.

“Sand Earthlings can raise Malicious Sand Spirits, who are powerful ferocious beasts from ancient times. They are extremely tall and large, and usually lie in the desert, which makes it hard to distinguish them from the sand. But when they wake up, they become the kings of the desert.

Dijiu Mo Sha turned his head around and cast Su Ming a glance, then looked at the Abyss Dragon and the bald crane, and said cautiously, “Sand Earthlings don’t raise too many of these ancient, powerful beasts, but each of them... is exceptionally powerful. We will need half a month to pass through this desert. During this time, it’ll be best for us not to bother Sand Earthlings.”

Once Su Ming nodded to show his understanding, Dijiu Mo Sha sucked in a deep breath and stepped into the desert. Then, with his full speed, he charged forward, and Su Ming followed behind him. As he passed through the place, he looked at the desert around him. The main color here was brown, with seldom any yellow. Neither was there a lot of black.

The color made it seem as if the sand had been dyed in blood, which had dried up in time. A primitive and savage air surrounded the place.

The moaning wind lifted the sand and sent it sweeping into the distance, causing the area to look hazy. It was incredibly easy for people to lose their way here, especially since divine sense was limited in this place.

But Dijiu Mo Sha clearly had a way to know the direction. Perhaps he was worried that Su Ming would misunderstand him or perhaps it was because his speed was not on par with his companions, but when he moved, he always maintained a set amount of distance between them.

Time trickled by. When the sixth day arrived, they had already stepped into the depths of the desert. Wherever they looked, there was only sand, and all they could hear was the moaning wind as well as sand moving about.

Dijiu Mo Sha let out a sigh of relief and turned his head around to whisper to Su Ming, "So far, so good. We should not run into any accidents in this trip, since no Sand Earthlings have blocked our path. Honestly, as long as we don't provoke them and avoid breaking their taboo, we should be safe."

"Taboo?" A focused glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes.

"Yes, Sand Earthlings are very unique because they don't have any females among them. All their people are spirits born from sand, which is why they treat this region of sand as their race's mother.

"Hence, they only have one taboo. They will not allow any female living beings to step into the place. They believe that this is a form of blasphemy.

"If any female living creature stepped into this place, they would be captured and buried here so that they would become part of their race's mother, but this has nothing to do with us..." Dijiu Mo Sha said in a relaxed tone, but just when he did so, the ground underneath them started trembling.

These tremors made it seem as if there was a huge dragon tumbling about below the ground. There was also a rumbling that sounded like roars coming from all directions. At the same time, Su Ming saw the windstorm from the desert roar behind them. It swelled up, and a hand that was thousands of feet big pushed out from within a puffed-up sand bump.

It was a hand formed from sand. Soon, another hand appeared, and then, a giant of several tens of thousands of feet stood up from the ground.

When it hoisted up its simple and heavy body, a large amount of sand fell down. Windstorms rose up and circled around the area. They formed an armor and a cloak for the giant. The spirit had no eyes, only a mouth, and when it opened it, sand fell from its upper lip like rain pouring down from the sky. A loud rumble echoed in all directions.

"Gruuu!"

The giant lifted its head and roared. It did not even look at Su Ming and the others, but instead took large strides to charge in the direction from which the group had come. With each step it took, the ground would tremble. After a moment, Su Ming saw another giant climbing up from the ground farther away. As it roared, it let out a loud rumble.

"Malicious Sand Spirit!" Dijiu Mo Sha's expression changed, and he instinctively took a few steps back, but when he saw the giant leaving into the distance, he relaxed. "I wonder who provoked the Sand Earthlings in this desert..." He shook his head and looked towards Su Ming. At that moment, he noticed that Su Ming had a crease between his brows.

A sound like that of a whistle rose abruptly from the ground. This sound rose and fell, and there were also piercing screeches echoing alongside it. Thankfully, they could tell that all the noise was heading swiftly into the distance.

“A female has entered the desert!” Dijiu Mo Sha’s eyes focused swiftly. “That’s definitely the case, or else the whistles from the Sand Earthlings would not be sounded out, and they would not head forward either. If this was just a normal provocation, they would not appear.”

Su Ming sighed and rubbed the center of his brows.

“Where does your tribe lie?” Su Ming looked towards Dijiu Mo Sha.

“If you go straight from here for around ten days, you’ll be able to leave this desert. From there, you will see a broken planet, and that planet is where my tribe is located,” Dijiu Mo Sha explained in detail.

When Su Ming heard this, he lifted his right hand and pushed it downwards at the ground. Immediately, the sand below sank down, showing signs that it was burning and melting. The outline of a runic symbol was formed.

Then, as Su Ming swung his arm, the sand around him swam about and covered the runic symbol.

“This is...” Dijiu Mo Sha was momentarily stunned.

“I will leave for a while. Wait for me in your tribe. In a month’s time at most, I will come there,” Su Ming said faintly, then turned his head around to look at the bald crane and the Abyss Dragon.

The bald crane had the same train of thought as Su Ming, and naturally understood his intentions. With a single move, it rushed towards Su Ming and was put into his storage. As for the Abyss Dragon, even though it was not willing, it did not refuse being put into the storage bag as well. Once Su Ming did this, a stern look appeared on his face, and a freezing glare shone in his eyes.

Before it could fade away, he took a step in the direction from which they had come, and he was so quick that he shot forward like a bolt of lightning, stirring up sand and slicing through the air. It was as if the void had clashed with those that possessed corporeal form, and sharp, piercing sounds rose from that clash.

Before Dijiu Mo Sha could even say anything Su Ming had already left into the distance. A focused glint appeared in the thin man’s eyes, and he looked pensive. He hesitated for a moment, then turned around and left in the direction of his tribe.

He might not be able to guess what the man wanted to do, but it had to be related to the abnormal reaction from the Sand Earthlings. With his level of cultivation, it was difficult for the thin man to participate in this, so there was no need for him to follow Su Ming. Bringing the other to his tribe could already be considered as repaying him for saving his life, and from then onwards, they would no longer have anything to do with each other.

In a place far away from Su Ming was the edge of the desert. At that moment, the sand was tumbling about, and rumbling sounds were echoing in the air, as if the ground had turned into an ocean. Sharp whistles resounded in the air.

Xu Hui's expression was one of determination, and there was a murderous look in her long and narrow eyes. She was looking at the area around her with a cold smile on her lips. Dressed in red robes, she was an incredibly distinct presence in the desert. She was like a multiflora rose in bloom that showed off a tempting beauty.

She did not retreat. Instead, with a single move, she charged into the deeper parts of the desert. The rumbling sounds in the area grew even stronger. After a moment, as the ground trembled violently, Xu Hui saw a giant tens of thousands of feet tall roaring and charging towards her from the distance.

Before it could even come close, it lifted its right hand and drew it swiftly upwards. Immediately, the sand before it roared and tumbled about to stir up a whirlwind of sand. As it whistled, it swept through the sky and closed in on Xu Hui within an instant.

Chapter 925: Sand Earthlings

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

Xu Hui let out a cold harrumph and did not stop moving even when the whirlwind closed in on her. At that time, he quickly formed a seal in front of her and spread her arms outwards.

“Scatter!”

Her hair danced in the wind, but the moment she said that one word, the whirlwind in front of her abruptly stopped. A roar that seemed to have come from an ancient time came from the whirlwind.

That roar contained a will that desired to destroyed the universe. It turned into flames in the depths of the whirlwind and spread out abruptly. Immediately, the whirlwind in front of Xu Hui was set ablaze and turned into a whirlwind of fire.

The roar gained a sharp edge and turned into a screech in the end. As it traveled out, a fire phoenix rushed out of the fire whirlwind. It was several thousands of feet long and looked incredibly mighty. It circled around the world, and its screeches burned everything in all directions.

“Flame Phoenix, come forth!” A murderous glint shone in Xu Hui’s eyes. She lifted her right hand and pointed towards the sand giant in the distance, and the fire phoenix instantly charged towards the giant.

As the giant roared, the two of them crashed into each other. A loud bang shook the ground and spread out with great intensity.

The powerful divine ability from Lunar Kalpa Realm was shown in its full glory at that moment by Xu Hui’s hands.

Her speed did not change. Within an instant, she reached the giant whose entire body was engulfed in a sea of fire. Its knees caved in, and with a loud thump, it knelt down on the ground. It appeared to be in pain as its body started burning away.

But Xu Hui did not relax her guard. Instead, a grim expression appeared on her face. She stopped moving and stood where she was, looking around the area. As the giant burned, the ground around her started shaking, and a dozen more sand giants appeared. These Malicious Sand Spirits took big strides forward, and each time their feet landed on the ground, it would tremble. All of the creatures were swiftly closing in on her.

These giants alone were not enough to make Xu Hui react, though. What caused her pupils to shrink was a sand giant that was thousands of feet tall in the distance. The sand by his feet seemed to have gained sentience and formed a small hill.

He stood on the small hill, and a bitingly cold glare shone in his eyes as he stared at Xu Hui from the distance. In his left hand was a yellow longbow. That bow was several thousands of feet tall, the same height as his body.

In fact, the sand farther away from Xu Hui formed a round barrier as it tumbled about. Whistles resounded from there, and dwarves of only half an average man’s height appeared in swarms. They were dressed in simple clothes, and their bodies were incredibly dirty, as if they had never washed themselves since they were born.

These dwarves stood close to each other, and they numbered to tens of thousands. They surrounded the area, whistling to each other. The piercing noise acted as a background to the area around Xu Hui, and it created a bizarre atmosphere.

Xu Hui’s expression was dark, but before she could do anything, the dozen sand giants around her had already closed in on her. As they roared, the sand on the ground flew up, and a dozen something whirlwinds manifested to swiftly rush towards her.

The whirlwinds were quick, and in the blink of an eye, they submerged Xu Hui. During that moment, the sand giant of thousands of feet tall on the hill lifted the bow in his left hand. He held the bowstring with his right hand, and with a yank, he drew the bow.

The sand around him floated up and gathered together. In the span of a few breaths, a sand arrow formed on the bow!

Buzz!

A sound echoed through the world, for the giant had released the string. Immediately, the sand arrow let out a piercing whistle that shook the sky and earth and turned into a shooting star that charged towards Xu Hui.

It sliced through space, burning it, and the arrow's tip turned into a statue of a deity!

The deity had its arms wrapped around its chest. Its eyes were closed, and it was a man dressed in armor. Within an instant, the statue closed in on Xu Hui, who had been attacked by a dozen something whirlwinds.

Bang!

Eight of them turned into flames, but at the instant the arrow shot in, they turned into loud booms that surged into the sky. Amid that noise, Xu Hui retreated swiftly. When she had moved thousands of feet back, blood trickled out of the corners of her mouth. With a pale face, she glared at the giant with the bow in the distance.

Excited and agitated roars tumbled out of the mouths of the Sand Earthlings who were only half an average man's height around her. These people were all men, and in the mid of their excitement, they raised their heads and roared, as if they were in a rut.

The killing intent in Xu Hui's eyes grew stronger. When she saw that the dozen something giants were getting closer, she moved and disappeared without a trace, but at the instant she vanished, another gigantic statue of a deity appeared in the desert. It was in a spot that was incredibly far away.

That statue was hundreds of thousands of feet tall. Its appearance was the exact same as that of the statue formed on the arrow shot by the giant with the bow.

However, it was more majestic and seemed to possess a more corporeal form. At the top of the hundred thousand feet deity statue was an old man that was only half an average man's height. He was dressed in beast skins, and his body was incredibly dirty. However, there was intelligence shining in his eyes. In his hands he held a black skull. Once he raised it above his head, he roared.

That roar contained words of his language, which was complex and sounded awkward, and was difficult to understand.

Yet as the man roared, the entire desert started moaning, as if it was communicating with him. At that moment, a chilling glare shone in the old man's eyes, and he lifted his right hand to point into the distance, at Xu Hui.

The moment he pointed at her was the moment she had fused into space. Ripples instantly appeared at the spot she had vanished, and she was forced out.

Her expression changed. She gritted her teeth and moved once more. This time, she did not fuse into space, but shifted. Yet at the instant she disappeared, the sound of something crashing came from the left side of the round barrier that encircled the area.

The expressions of the hundreds of Sand Earthlings on the barrier remained the same. They were still excited and agitated, and the vulgar looks were still on their faces.

Xu Hui was once again forced out from the space before them. And this time, more blood trickled down the corners of her lips.

Her face was pale. She had failed in her attempt to fuse into space, and she had also failed when she tried to leave the place. A powerful seal that was even greater than her power had been placed in this area.

She could not rush out of this seal!

She could ignore the dozen something sand giants around her, but with just one arrow, that person with the bow had managed to injure her. In her eyes, this person was a powerful warrior who was at Lunar Kalpa Realm, just like her!

She could still handle this sort of encirclement, albeit with some difficulty, but if anyone else showed up, it would become difficult for her to escape.

Almost at the instant she was forced out, a piercing buzz could be heard. The second arrow from the person with the bow shot through space and appeared in front of Xu Hui.

She gritted her teeth and turned around. As her hair swayed in the air, she formed a seal in front of her, then pointed at the incoming arrow.

The arrow crumbled with a bang, but Xu Hui still coughed up blood. She took a few staggering steps backwards, but she did not show weakness. Instead, she disappeared again.

When she reappeared, she was already next to the person with the bow. She lifted her right hand and pushed forward. When she moved her fingers away from each other, three crimson rings flew out from them.

Right after these three rings appeared, they connected with each other and charged towards the person with the bow.

A glint appeared in the eyes of the person with the bow. He did not dodge, but bent his body slightly and pushed against the ground with his left hand.

With it, loud bangs rose into the air. The endless sand in the area gathered around him and turned into a protective barrier. Once the three rings crashed into it, the sand barrier crumbled, but at the same time, the third arrow rushed out. With a loud whistle, it rushed at Xu Hui's face.

She was about to dodge it when a cold harrumph followed by complicated and difficult to understand sounds echoed in the air. Those sounds were coming from somewhere far away from this place.

That voice belonged to the old man sitting on the hundred thousand feet statue that could not be seen from the spot in which Xu Hui was fighting. He lifted his left hand and seized the air in the direction of the sky. A ferocious smile appeared on his lips.

Xu Hui was in the air, but it was completely impossible for her to dodge, because she could sense that her body had been seized by an invisible hand. The power coming from that hand belonged to those in Solar Kalpa Realm, and it seemed to want to crush her.

She could not dodge, and the arrow arrived with a bang. Xu Hui coughed up blood, but her body regained mobility. As she continued retreating, her robes were torn, and her right shoulder became a bloody mess.

Yet she still didn't choose to give up. While retreating, she lifted her left hand and struck a few places on her body. Seventeen figures instantly appeared around her.

"Eighteen Strikes on the Lake of Phoenix!" Xu Hui shouted out in a low timbre, and all the figures around her immediately gathered on her body, which was in midair. Together, they turned into the shape of a crescent moon.

The power of Lunar Kalpa Realm erupted from her body, and a sea of fire erupted from the moon, as if it had turned into a phoenix. It charged towards the person with the bow, and it was so quick that it closed in on the target in an instant.

The expression of the person with the bow changed. He immediately retreated while drawing his bow. Three arrows were formed, and he shot them out at the same moment.

All of this happened in quick succession. In an instant, both sides crashed into each other, and a powerful, piercing light burst forth. It prevented everyone in the area from seeing anything.

At that moment, Su Ming was at a spot that was not too far from that particular area in the desert while traveling at his greatest speed. He even asked the Duke of Crimson

Flame to shift them. When he occasionally disappeared, he would reappear far from his original place.

His expression was dark as he charged forward. If the person who was trapped was not the person he thought to be, then he would ignore her, but if she was who he believed her to be, then Su Ming... had to save Xu Hui, who had followed him in secret.

After all, she had come to this place to protect him, and since he was not Dao Kong, his personality was not that of Dao Kong, which was why he had to save her!

He traveled so quickly that he swept up sand with the wind he stirred up. Booming sounds echoed in the air as he got closer to the place where Xu Hui was trapped.

Chapter 926: Her Husband-In-Name!

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

‘It hurts...’

This was the main thought Xu Hui had at the moment her body was flung away. When she fell on the ground, she forced herself to stand up and remain on her feet. Her face was pale, though, and she coughed up a large mouthful of blood. Her body was covered in injuries, and she looked a bloody mess, as if she could not remain steady for much longer.

She had already done her best. The level of cultivation of the person with the bow was about the same as hers, which forced her to use the Art of Lake of Phoenix. She had not mastered this Art, and every single time she used it, she would have to suffer repercussions.

But the might from that Art was definitely not something ordinary. The bow in the person’s hand had already landed in the distance. His right arm was gone, and seventeen wounds that penetrated his body had appeared on his chest.

His face was pale. He coughed up blood as well, and his body, which was thousands of feet tall, started shrinking rapidly. Only when he was a hundred feet tall did he manage to control his injuries. He glared at Xu Hui and let out a low roar.

As he did so, the sand around him gathered together to stop his blood from flowing out. It also gathered on his right arm to form a new limb. Once it appeared, he seized the air in the direction of the bow, and it swiftly flew over at him. As sand continued gathering on his body, he became thousands of feet tall once more.

He stood there as if he had never been injured before. The sand also gathered above his head to form a moon!

It was a moon formed of sand!

For the first time, despair appeared in Xu Hui's eyes. She staggered backwards, but just as she was about to retreat, she suddenly bent her back, and out of nowhere, her body was sent to the ground. She crashed into the sand with a bang.

A semi-transparent, short person appeared in the spot where Xu Hui had previously stood and pulled back the punch he had just thrown. The short person's figure might be indistinct, but anyone who saw him could tell that he was an old man. He... was the old man whose physical body was on the hundred thousand feet statue in the distance.

This current existence of his was an illusory body formed by his divine ability.

The old man might be short, but the moment he appeared, the person with the bow that was thousands of feet tall immediately knelt down to worship him. The sand giants that were tens of thousands of feet tall in the area also knelt down and worshiped him.

The tens of thousands of Sand Earthlings on the round barrier also prostrated themselves on the barrier with excitement, exhilaration, and fervent fanaticism.

Xu Hui struggled up from the ground, but before she could do anything, the sand around her closed in and turned into four chains that fastened themselves to her limbs. They lifted her up and hung her in the air.

The old man with the illusory body lifted his right hand, and a sand blade appeared in his hand. He grabbed that blade and walked slowly to Xu Hui. The cries of joy from the Sand Earthlings around him grew stronger when he did that. Voices rose and fell, as if they were chanting words of some ritual.

Xu Hui bit the bottom of her lip. Her cultivation base had completely scattered due to the old man's punch just then. A seal had also been placed in her to prevent her from self-destructing.

She looked at the sky quietly, and pictures from her past flashed before her eyes. She was born in a normal family, but when she was young, she was taken away by Phoenix Sect. Because of that, her parents' appearances had already become indistinct, and she could no longer remember them clearly.

She had returned to her hometown once, but that place had already turned to dust in the passage of time. Her family had become old and passed away a long time ago, and all traces of them had disappeared long ago.

Yet at this moment, the pictures before her eyes suddenly became much clearer. She saw her parents and her family...

Those pictures continued one after another, and a gentle smile blossomed on Xu Hui's lips. She gradually closed her eyes.

'This is my life... From the moment I became a disciple of Phoenix Sect, my fate was set in stone... I had to live my whole life for a direct descendant of Morning Dao Sect.

'This was my life... but now, I can consider myself to be free from it.' Xu Hui sighed softly in her heart.

When she closed her eyes and waited for death, a loud noise shot up from the barrier's outer side. Along with it came the panicked cries of tens of thousands of Sand Earthlings.

There were also furious roars from the dozen something sand giants and a cold harrumph from the illusory old man.

Because of all of this, Xu Hui who had already given up on hope, attempted to open her eyes, and her eyelashes fluttered. However, her body had lost all strength, and she even lacked the power to open her eyes.

She could open them only a small crack, and through her eyelashes and blurriness, she saw a familiar figure ramming his fist against the barrier as he stood in the distance, right outside the barrier.

'It's him...' Xu Hui mumbled in her heart. 'He should not have come. With his personality, he should have regarded everything with his own personal interests in mind...

'So why... is he here...?

'When the Waves of Tears attacked us, he returned. Now, he also came back. Is he... really Dao Kong...? Can a person really change so quickly...? But no matter who you are, whether you are Dao Kong or someone else, thank you...'

Xu Hui's heart was calm. As she mumbled in her heart, she was uttering words that only her soul could hear.

Su Ming rammed his fist against the barrier again, and violent sounds rang in all directions. A powerful rebound came from the barrier, causing Su Ming to stagger a few steps back.

When he lifted his head, he saw Xu Hui inside, her limbs shackled by sand chains. He saw that her eyes had already fallen shut, and her presence was like a barely discernible thread.

At the same time, he saw the Sand Earthlings and the dozen something Malicious Sand Spirits, along with the person with the bow reaching up to thousands of feet tall and the illusory old man.

The mighty pressure of Lunar Kalpa Realm from the person with the bow, the power of Solar Kalpa Realm from the illusory old man, and the dozen something sand giants with the power of the later stage of World Plane Realm caused Su Ming's pupils to shrink.

This was not something he could stand against with his current power. The dozen something sand giants were still manageable, but the person with the bow alone was already a great threat to Su Ming, let alone the illusory old man.

Su Ming remained calm. When he retreated, the dozen something sand giants in the barrier roared and took long strides forward. Their bodies could seep through the barrier, and they charged towards Su Ming.

As for the person with the bow, a scornful look appeared on his face. In his eyes, Su Ming, who was only in World Plane Realm, did not even possess the qualifications for him to use the bow. In fact, he was confident that he could reduce Su Ming to ashes with just one arrow.

Su Ming sighed in his heart. Xu Hui's life was hanging on a thread, and with each second, her life was exposed to more danger. He did not have the leisure to think anymore, unless he chose not to save her, but since he decided to save this slightly silly girl, then exposure of his power was no longer part of his considerations.

"Oh well."

Su Ming shook his head and took a step forward. At the instant he did that, the power of Divine Essence rose swiftly in his body. Countless uneven runic symbols appeared on the Sacred Constellation Robe that had turned into sackcloth. At that instant, his power started rising.

He was so quick that in the blink of an eye, he was already on the verge of crashing into a sand giant. That sand giant laughed ferociously and hurled a fist forward, but Su Ming did not even spare it a glance. In fact, he did not even bother dodging. He simply rushed forward.

With a bang, Su Ming crashed into the sand giant. At the instant they came into contact with each other, the ferocious smile on the malicious spirit turned into disbelief, and its right arm crumbled with a bang. Su Ming shot through the giant's body, completely uninjured, then lifted his right hand and hurled a punch backwards.

With that one punch, the sand giant's body trembled, and crumbled to pieces.

"Too weak."

Su Ming lifted his foot and took his second step. His level of cultivation had already risen to the later stage of World Plane Realm at that moment. This was due to the fusion between his physical power and his cultivation base, and it was the power that erupted from him after they synthesized with each other.

The two sand giants in front of him whipped up whirlwinds as they roared. Those whirlwinds swept up their bodies and instantly closed in on the incoming Su Ming. They crashed into each other in an instant.

Bang! Bang!

Two loud bangs shook the sky and earth, shocking all the Sand Earthlings when they looked over. Right before their eyes, the two sand giants shuddered and fell apart together as if a power they could not withstand had shattered their entire existences.

Su Ming did not stop moving and took his third step. At that moment, his rising power fused with his Divine Essence, and he obtained the power equivalent to those who had attained great completion in the later stage of World Plane Realm. With just one more step, he would step into Lunar Kalpa Realm.

This was Su Ming's current limit, and it was also the strongest power he could muster, but that was just... if he did not use his Ecang clone!

With the next breath, when Su Ming took his fourth step forward and four sand giants appeared in front of him, a word that only he could hear came from his mouth.

"Ecang."

At the instant he said that, within Western Ring Nebula's foreign land, which was located in Western Ring Nebula, a galaxy under the jurisdiction of the four Great True Worlds that was incredibly far away from Divine Essence Star Ocean and had Black Ink Planet situated in between them, Su Ming's Ecang clone opened his eyes within the purple galaxy.

There was a purple tint to his eyes, and a matchless, mighty pressure erupted from his body with a bang.

At the instant Su Ming in the desert crashed into the four sand giants, his level of cultivation rose once again, and in a flash, he reached Lunar Kalpa Realm!

This did not mean that he had truly reached Lunar Kalpa Realm, because there was no moon around his body, but at that moment, the presence that came from his body gave off the feeling that... he was in Lunar Kalpa Realm!

Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang!

Four consecutive bangs shot up, and the four sand giants in front of Su Ming shattered. He took his fifth step and threw a punch against the barrier. It was just one punch, but the barrier instantly started trembling. Cracks spread out, and the barrier collapsed into pieces with a bang!

That punch was incredibly close to Solar Kalpa Realm, and it contained Divine Essence, so even though Xu Hui could not break the barrier, Su Ming could!

The expression of the person with the bow changed drastically, and disbelief appeared on his face. He saw how Su Ming continued to become stronger. With just five steps, he had managed to climb up from his initial level in World Plane Realm, which the man with the bow had scoffed at, straight up to Lunar Kalpa Realm. That last punch had also exuded a power that was incredibly close to Solar Kalpa Realm, and his heart trembled.

The illusory old man by the side also had a grim expression which had never appeared before on his face.

“Sir, who are you?!” the illusory old man instantly shouted out in a shrill voice.

“You can call me Dao Kong. I am... the husband-in-name of the woman beside you.”

Chapter 927: God of Berserkers' Palm

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

“...husband-in-name...”

That sentence seemed to last for one thousand years as it echoed in Xu Hui's ears. The words were long, drawn-out, and slow. They rang in her ears as if they were from a different era.

A layer of ripples stirred in Xu Hui's heart, which had gradually fallen into dead stillness... Those ripples were like a blossoming flower that continued spreading outwards. They echoed in her... until they turned into a force which allowed her to open her eyes at that moment.

Her eyes that could be seen through the slit they had opened were dark, without light, and lusterless. Still, they saw things, and they focused on the figure of her husband-in-

name standing beyond the crumbling barrier. The pieces from the barrier seemed to be serving as a background, as a foil to his figure, making him into the center of attention.

Su Ming's words echoed far and wide, causing the illusory old man's heart to sink, and the person with the bow standing by his side hoisted the bow in his left hand without hesitation. He swiftly drew the bow with his right hand, then released the bowstring, and a sound of an arrow shooting through the air could be heard. A sharp arrow formed from sand charged towards Su Ming at lightning speed, and within an instant, it appeared in front of him, who was walking through the broken barrier.

The arrow was so quick that its speed was difficult to describe with words. Even if it was still in the distance before a person blinked, it would be at the center of the person's brows when he finished blinking.

Su Ming raised his head and looked towards it coldly. At that moment, he was infinitesimally close to Solar Kalpa Realm, which was due to the power sent to him from his Ecang clone. However, this was not his strongest form before his Ecang clone personally came to this place.

He could... become even stronger!

As he raised his head, he lifted his right hand. He did not retreat, but instead took a step forward once more. Before his foot even landed, he had already seized the air before him, and a powerful force spread up his body from his hand.

That force was like an entire mountain range crashing into him, causing Su Ming's arms to go numb, but as the power was split across his body, he forcefully resolved that great power. At the same time, he completed his sixth step.

Bang!

The ground trembled due to Su Ming's foot, and the sand shivered because his foot had landed on it. Clouds and wind surged up at that instant. As the winds howled, they grew stronger, sweeping up Su Ming's long hair, because of which he looked frightful and aloof. There was also a monstrous sinister air about him.

What he had seized with his right hand was the sand arrow the person with the bow had shot!

That arrow hummed in his hand, but it could not escape from his palm. Su Ming lowered his head and cast a glance at the arrow in his hand. A strange glint slowly appeared in his eyes, and that strange light turned into a sun, a moon, and a star that tumbled backwards in his eyes, as if time itself was flowing backwards there.

Once the person with the bow and the illusory old man saw the strange light in his eyes, their expressions changed, especially that of the illusory old man. He even instinctively

took a few steps backwards and cried out shrilly, "Power of time, you-you-you're an apostle of the Temporal Spirit!"

"It's this bow... this arrow..." Su Ming seemed to not have heard the illusory old man's piercing voice. He looked at the arrow in his hand, and various scenes flashed in his eyes. In them were Xu Hui's heroic figure from moments ago and her resistance as well as counterattacks when faced with the arrows.

When Su Ming saw the Eighteen Strikes of the Lake of Phoenix and the person with the bow firing three arrows, the powerful piercing light from the final moment was like a final blast of flames that burned his eyes. The scenes disappeared in the fire, and his eyes returned to normal at that instant.

"... that hurt her."

Su Ming raised his head. With a squeeze, the sand arrow crumbled in his hand, turning into fine sand that fell through the gaps between his fingers. Wind blew past and swept up this sand, turning it into a veil that floated past Su Ming.

"Kill him!"

The illusory old man retreated swiftly as his shrill voice echoed in the air, and the remaining sand giants charged towards Su Ming with a furious roar. At that moment, the person with the bow had an incredibly solemn expression on his face. As he rushed forward, he drew the bow once again, and this time, there were three arrows on the bow.

As the illusory old man retreated, the sand blade in his hand disappeared. A black, illusory skull appeared in his hand, and as he rubbed it, complex chants tumbled out of his mouth.

As they rang in the air, muffled bangs came from up in the sky, as if it had turned into a barrier and there was someone behind it trying to break through.

A cold sneer appeared on Su Ming's lips. He swiftly moved forward and instantly came in front of a sand giant. He then lifted his right hand to press against the center of that sand giant's brows.

His size might seem as insignificant as an ant's compared to that of the giant, but when he pressed his hand between its brows, the sand giant started trembling violently. Despair appeared on its face, and cracks tore through its forehead, then spread through his whole body. Su Ming's strike contained the offensive power that was infinitesimally close to that of Solar Kalpa Realm, and it was definitely not something that a Malicious Sand Spirit with the power equivalent to those in the later stage of World Plane Realm could withstand.

Bang!

The sand giant's body crumbled, disassembled layer by layer. When Su Ming left, it had already turned into a small hill of sand. The creature had lost its spirit and its life force.

At the same time, another sand giant swung its gigantic fist, and like a sandstorm, it swept up Su Ming's robes. At the instant it closed in on him with a furious roar, he turned his head. He did not attack, and neither did he dodge, but in his eyes appeared the shadows of the sun and moon!

This was... the Illusion of Stars, Sun, and Moon. This Art contained a power that existed if one believed in it, and it was something Su Ming had mastered a little in Black Ink Planet.

That power had fused into his Illusion of Stars, Sun, and Moon. At that moment, it erupted, and the incoming sand giant's body immediately trembled. Its fist came to a swift halt in front of Su Ming, and a dazed look appeared in its eyes. There was also a hint of struggle in them.

Su Ming no longer bothered about the sand giants. With a leap, he stepped onto one's head, then jumped into the air as his long hair danced in the wind and his robes fluttered. His gaze was biting cold, and it was not missed by the person with the bow.

At that instant, booms echoed in the air. There were still eight sand giants that were coming towards Su Ming, along with the three arrows from the person with the bow. Whistling, they sliced through the air towards Su Ming, who was airborne.

Before they closed in, a low roar tumbled out of the mouth that belonged to the person with the bow.

"Explode!"

While his voice echoed in the air, loud bangs rang out from the three arrows. They crumbled at once and exploded in midair. These arrows were not used to injure someone, but to use the impact from the explosion to shock the enemy. This was the intention of the person with the bow.

As booming sounds echoed in the air, the person with the bow paused momentarily on the ground. He stabbed the bow into the sand as his body trembled, then pulled the bowstring and let out a roar that shook the skies.

"Murder in a Hundred Arrows!"

As he roared, the sand around him floated up. Within an instant, it turned into a hundred sharp arrows. At the instant the man released the bowstring, the whistles from the one

hundred arrows shook the sky and earth. They shot out in one motion and charged towards the airborne Su Ming.

“Long-distance attacks are indeed effective. Are you taking advantage of me for not having such an Art?” Su Ming asked flatly. At that moment, he tapped his storage bag with his right hand, and immediately, a gourd appeared in his palm!

He swept his left hand across the gourd before he released it in the direction in front of himself. Then, he bowed down to the gourd.

“Treasured gourd, please kill!”

Once he said these words, a powerful light erupted from the gourd. That light contained six colors, and as they continued changing, an eye appeared. It locked onto the person with the bow, and a small person with a sharp blade in its hands flew out from the gourd. The little thing did not have eyes, but it still managed to instantly charge towards the person with the bow.

It flew past the hundred arrows as if they weren't even there, which was an incredibly shocking. The hundred arrows continued to come for Su Ming, while the treasured gourd came for the person with the bow!

“Murder in a Thousand Arrows!”

The expression of the person with the bow standing on the ground changed, and his pupils shrank. At the instant the treasured gourd was taken out, a sense of danger rose in his heart, especially when the eye on the gourd locked onto him. In fact, this gourd reminded him of a treasure he'd seen in the memories he inherited. That item had made him tremble in the same manner, and it looked very similar.

Under this threat, he executed his most powerful divine ability without hesitation. Once did so, a gigantic vortex appeared around his feet.

Some of the Sand Earthlings who did not manage to escape in time let out shrill screams of pain in the vortex, for their bodies were reduced to pieces of flesh and blood. But at that moment of danger, the person with the bow could no longer care about the Sand Earthlings. Protecting his own life was the most important thing.

Sharp arrows shot out from the gigantic vortex. Thousands of them came out, causing loud bangs that shook the sky and earth as they sliced through the air. The sight that this created was one that would definitely be handed down through generations if it was painted into a picture!

The arrows closed in on Su Ming at an incredibly fast pace, and a glint appeared in his eyes. He lowered his head in midair, ignoring the arrows. Instead, he looked at his own right palm.

He looked at it and at the palm lines there. At the moment the arrows closed in on him, he pushed forward with his right hand.

“God of Berserkers’... Palm!” he said flatly.

Immediately, an illusion that was several tens of thousands of feet tall appeared in the air. That illusion spread around Su Ming, eventually forming a huge palm!

The palm lines on in were the exact same ones as those on Su Ming’s right palm. At that moment, the shadow of the sun and moon in his eyes also started flickering.

The palm stood erect when it appeared in the world. When Su Ming pushed forward with his right hand, booming sounds surged into the sky. The palm seeped through his body, then traveled forward with deafening booms. Cracks appeared in space, and fissures tore through the sky. Like a wall, the palm crashed into the thousand arrows.

This was Su Ming executing an Art of the God of Berserkers after his level of cultivation had come infinitesimally close to Solar Kalpa Realm!

Chapter 928: Who... Summoned Me

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

This was not a simple God of Berserkers’ Art. It was an Art that was cast after Su Ming had fused the Illusion of Stars, Sun, and Moon in it, along with the mysterious power that would exist as long as he believed in it.

It could be said that only Su Ming alone could cast this divine ability in the universe. This Art might have started with the base of Second God of Berserkers’ Palm, but even the Second God of Berserkers would find it impossible to cast this divine ability to this extent.

This was... Su Ming’s Palm!

He believed his palm could break through space. He believed that his palm could destroy all those arrows, and he also believed... that his palm was a barrier that could not be shattered in this battlefield.

The palm grew larger. With a bang, it crashed into the thousand arrows. Booming sounds rose up, shaking the sky and earth. The small human from the gourd had turned into a long arc to charge towards the person with the bow, whose expression changed and who retreated swiftly. He had also seen the scene in the sky, and his heart trembled. He could not help but shout a word, “Transform!”

Right when this word was said, the thousand arrows immediately turned, and an even sharper penetrating force erupted from them. They gathered together with the other one hundred arrows, and all of them turned into one arrow!

Its might exploded, and it was several times greater than before. At this moment, Su Ming smiled.

The power that would exist if he believed in it was fused into Su Ming's divine ability. Its form was derived from the God of Berserkers' Palm, its spirit was from the Illusion of Stars, Sun, and Moon, and its power... was the Art that would exist as long as he believed in it.

However, even if Su Ming believed in the Art, he would only have executed half of the Art... The other half of the Art could only be completed when another person believed in it as well. Only then would it truly become Su Ming's unique divine ability.

And at that moment when the person with the bow spoke, it was clear... that he believed.

Because of that, Su Ming's gigantic illusory palm was no longer an illusion. It swiftly gained corporeal form, and with a bang, it crashed into the arrow.

Booming sounds surged into the sky. Loud bangs resounded in all directions, causing the empty air to tremble. In the mid of those bangs, an impact that was as great as a windstorm tumbled swiftly through the area before surging backwards.

The one arrow formed by one thousand and one hundred arrows... was disassembled in the sky. Once the arrows separated, they crumbled and exploded, unable to stop Su Ming's palm for even a moment!

The person with the bow on the ground no longer had any time to think. He retreated swiftly, but no matter what, he could not avoid the small person from the gourd slashing his neck!

The treasured gourd murdered a person. It was a murderous gourd!

Blood poured out from the neck of the person with the bow. He staggered, lifted his hands to press on the wound on his neck, but he could not do so... With just one slash from the gourd, his head flew up!

Sand rushed towards him swiftly from the area, as if it wanted to connect his head back to his body. Even with this sort of injury, the person with the bow was still not completely destroyed in terms of body and spirit. There was sand swiftly gathering on his empty neck, and he seemed as if he was about to recover in a moment. His body shrank swiftly, as if he was using the reduction of his body size in exchange for the recovery of his wound.

"I am the Malicious Sand Spirit Warrior! I am a spirit of the sand! I am the 3,691st scion of the Sand Spirits! I will not die here!" The head that had flown up let out a roar that shook the skies.

However, that roar was suppressed by Su Ming's gigantic palm in the sky. That palm had turned several hundreds of thousands of feet big from its initial tens of thousands, and it was fiercely pressing down on the ground, the roaring head, and the now headless person with the bow.

There were nearly ten thousand Sand Earthlings besides the person with the bow in that area of one hundred thousand feet. Their feeble bodies started trembling at that moment, and in the mid of their fear, they started fleeing in all directions.

They were afraid. They believed that the palm that seemed to be able to replace the sky could crush their bodies to pieces. As they believed in it, that palm grew increasingly stronger and more corporeal.

"Don't run! It's fake! Don't run! The more you believe in it, the stronger it will become!" The person's head fell on the ground and started roaring. If he still could not understand how Su Ming's Art worked, then he would have been unworthy of possessing power of Lunar Kalpa Realm!

Further into the distance was the illusory old man. At that moment, his Art had reached its crucial moment. He wanted to warn his people, but he also knew that his warnings in this life-and-death situation would be useless with how terrified his people were and how feeble their hearts were at that moment. That was why his eyes gained a cold edge, and his incantations grew even louder. He raised his arms and started calling to the sky.

The muffled booming sounds in the sky grew increasingly clearer.

"The color of the sand has become slightly duller," Su Ming said softly as he stood in midair.

Bang!

A loud bang reverberated in the air. The ground trembled. Once Su Ming's palm disappeared, a gigantic palm print was left on the ground. The sand chains around Xu Hui's body were gone, and she lay on the ground quietly, completely uninjured, but around her... were nearly ten thousand Sand Earthlings who were reduced to bloody mess. Their bones were completely crushed, and a bloody stench spread out. Their blood dyed the sand, making its color much more brilliant.

Right at the center was the person with the bow. His body had completely shattered, and it was the same for his head. His body and spirit had been destroyed.

Only the gigantic bow remained by his side. It was buried in the sand, with only its tip peeking out. As it quivered, it let out mournful whines.

Su Ming looked at his right index finger. Faint waves of fragrance that belonged to God Ascension Nectar spread out. This was due to him being unable to suppress the nectar with the seal once he brought out all his power into play.

Fortunately, this fragrance only filled the area around him and did not spread out.

With one move, Su Ming landed onto the ground. He passed the places with all the bloody puddles of Sand Earthlings. When he walked up to the place where the bow was buried, he stomped on the ground with his right foot, and the bow shot up from beneath the ground. Su Ming caught it.

At the instant he caught the bow, it started shrinking rapidly. Once it turned into a size Su Ming could use, the whines and shivers from the bow gained a submissive tone.

Su Ming put away the bow and walked towards Xu Hui. He gently picked her up from the ground, with one arm around her waist while letting her head rest against his chest. Waves of faint fragrance from Xu Hui's body wafted into Su Ming's nose, and he sent his life force into her body so that she could recover faster.

"Dao Kong..." Her voice was incredibly faint and weak as she struggled to open her eyes to look at Su Ming.

"Rest well. I'm here," he said softly and raised his head to look at the illusory old man, who was amid the tens of thousands of scattered Sand Earthlings, and who had his arms spread open, looking as if he was summoning something from the sky.

The old man's hair danced in the air, and his body shone as he shouted loudly towards the sky, "Hong Lashen, Suiyun Zhen Changlin !"

As his voice echoed in the air, a roar came from the sky. That roar spread through the entire desert. During that instant, every single grain of sand in the endless desert started trembling.

Near the end of the desert was Dijiu Mo Sha, and he was rushing forward swiftly. He could already see the end and the area beyond the edge of the desert. That was a tranquil galaxy, but at that instant, his expression changed swiftly. He dipped his head down to look at the sand in the desert, and a solemn expression appeared on his face. Once he turned his head around to look back into the distance, he gritted his teeth to charge out of the desert even faster.

He could sense a wave of madness and murderous intent coming from the sand. In fact, as he moved forward, the sand under his feet started moving like flowing water.

He had always been able to move quickly, and at that moment, he even bit the tip of his tongue to cough up a mouthful of blood. His body turned into a blood shadow and he left into the distance. He could sense that the sand in the region was not the only one that moved. Instead, all the sand in the desert had started moving. As it tumbled about, it stirred up a great windstorm. The booming sounds caused by the storm were mixed with moans, and that sound was reverberating through the entire desert.

After a moment, he finally rushed out of the desert and stepped into the tranquil galaxy beyond. Then, he turned his head around to look back... and saw a scene that caused his heart to tremble uncontrollably, because he saw a scene that he would never forget in his life.

He saw... a gigantic face in the sky above the desert!

That face looked as if someone was lying in the sky. At that moment, that someone's body started sinking. After the face, the body also appeared, and that body... was the size of the entire desert!

The hundred thousand feet statue started shivering in the desert. When it started showing signs of rousing from slumber, the old man at the top of its head sat down and meditated on it without moving a single inch. Meanwhile, the black skull he held in his bosom shone with a black light that could bring fear to people's hearts.

"Who... summoned me...?" a voice that reverberated through the entire desert came from the sky.

Su Ming lifted his head swiftly, and his pupils shrank. He saw a huge body in the sky as well as a boundless face. That face belonged to a man whose eyes were shut. A long scar ran from the center of his brows to his neck. There were parts in that scar that had yet to close up completely, and those remaining wounds were ghastly white.

A mighty pressure Su Ming had never sensed before descended from that body at that moment, and Su Ming could sense... that this pressure even surpassed that possessed by the Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death!

This pressure might be unable to compare to Ecang when it was at the peak of its condition, but it was incredibly close to it! This pressure was only slightly weaker than Sui Chen Zi's, but it gave Su Ming a feeling that this person was... a powerful warrior who was in the same Realm as Sui Chen Zi!

The hair of the person who was descending danced in the air, and they looked like dragons moving about the Heavenly Spirits. His skin was incredibly fair, making it look as if he had snow for skin, so all those who saw him will definitely not be unable to forget him.

At the spot where the center of his brows was torn was a cracked and broken mark. That mark... was of a desert, and it was exuding waves of power of Divine Essence that caused Su Ming's heart to tremble!

'Ancestral Spirit? Antecedental Spirit?' His pupils shrank.

"It is I, Long Di, the leader of the Sand Earthlings who have received your protection. I have disturbed your slumber because the Sand Earthlings are facing extermination... This person... this person has killed more than ten thousand of our people. He killed the spirit which you have bestowed upon us!" the illusory old man shouted out in a shrill voice. He had already knelt down on the ground, since the moment the person who was like a God had appeared in the sky.

All the other Sand Earthlings around him had prostrated themselves on the ground as well. The fervent zeal on their faces made it seem as if they were ready to burn their own souls.

1. Hong Lashen, Suiyun Zhen Changlin: Just a chant, no meaning. The second part is a name, though, so I like to think of it as "Come forth, Suiyun Zhen Changlin!"

2. Heavenly Spirits (天罡, tian1 gang1): These are actually planets. In Shui Hu Zhuan/Water Margin, there is a thing called 108 Stars of Destiny, and it is believed that a person's destiny is tied to a Star of Destiny. These Stars of Destiny are divided into two groups: 36 Heavenly Spirits and 72 Earthly Fiends.

Chapter 929: Suiyun Zhen Changlin

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

Su Ming's expression was cold. He held Xu Hui in his arms and lifted his head to look at the gigantic body as well as the pale face in the sky.

A sigh came from the sky. The gigantic person in the sky did not open his eyes, however. He kept them closed, and while he sighed, his words echoed in the air with a boom.

"This is a race I favor... They are my people... Thou... shouldst be buried in the void..."

The fragmented words rang in all directions. They brought with them a great mighty pressure that made it seem as if laws themselves were contained in them. At the instant they spread out, the sand around Su Ming started spinning about swiftly. The gigantic body in the sky then opened his mouth slightly.

An indescribable suction force came out, and the sand on the ground instantly started dancing. It flew up and charged towards the giant's mouth. The sand vortex around Su Ming turned into a whirlwind, sweeping up his body as if it wanted to devour him.

"You're just a broken spirit, and you dare to bury me, Su, as a punishment?!" Su Ming laughed coldly. Xu Hui had already fallen unconscious and was completely unaware of everything around her. She lay in Su Ming's bosom without moving.

Su Ming had his left arm wrapped around Xu Hui. As he raised his right hand, he pushed against the ground, and with it, the ground started rumbling and moving. The vortex around him stopped moving for an instant. At that time, without the suction force moving him, he shot up from the ground and charged towards the giant's mouth in the sky.

When he was in midair, Su Ming formed a seal with his right hand and pointed forward. Immediately, a mountain appeared in front of him!

Most of the mountain was white, and it looked like clouds. Only the edge near the top was black, and that area had the form of a malicious spirit. That creature was half-sprawled out on the mountain while holding a black bat in its right hand.

Naturally, this was... Dao Avenue Mountain, the one Su Ming had obtained from the Yu Family!

This treasure could be used without any need for Divine Essence, and its might was also extraordinary. At that moment, once Su Ming brought it out and pointed forward, Dao Avenue Mountain started growing bigger endlessly while charging at its target.

The giant in the sky still had his eyes closed, but his act of inhaling had very clearly become slightly faster. Yet even if it had only become slightly faster, the power of Divine Essence which had manifested around him burst forth in a magnitude that was stronger by several folds.

The wind seemed to have become sharp blades. As it roared, it charged towards Dao Avenue Mountain, which was rushing at the giant. While that mountain trembled, Su Ming formed a seal with his right hand and pointed forward again.

A roar instantly came from Dao Avenue Mountain. The malicious spirit looked like it had become alive and separated itself. As it roared, the bat in its right hand let out a piercing screech and shot out, turning into a long arc that charged towards the giant in the sky.

At that moment, the gigantic person in the sky finished inhaling, and just like a mortal who needed to breath out once he breathed in, he started swiftly exhaling.

Violent gusts of wind roared. A large amount of cracks instantly appeared on Dao Avenue Mountain, and it started falling backwards like a kite. Even the malicious spirit

could not maintain its form. It looked as if its entire body was about to be blown apart. And the bat could not get close, either.

Su Ming felt violent gusts of wind crashing into his face, as if they wanted to batter him until he was reduced to dust and fused with the void. As his body fell backwards, intense pain shot up his body, and even Xu Hui's flesh and bones started showing signs of separating from each other.

Su Ming turned around swiftly, using his back as a barrier to fight against the violent gusts. At the same time, he saw the mockery and the smugness on the illusory old man's face on the ground, and saw the bloodthirst as well as excitement on the faces of the tens of thousands of Sand Earthlings around him.

A biting cold glare shone in Su Ming's eyes. He formed a seal with his right hand and even bit the tip of his tongue to cough up a mouthful of blood. Once the blood fused with the seal, it immediately turned into a layer of blood mist. Through that blood mist, a white mountain rock shot out. This treasure that was Peace Arrives When the Elephant is Here swiftly manifested. The mountain rock which was the size of a palm swelled up, and in the blink of an eye, it turned into a large elephant that could trample the skies.

At the same time, the gigantic scale also took form. A piercing roar reverberated in the air, and the malicious spirit which had appeared previously seized the scale once it saw it.

Su Ming's hair danced in the air. His robes floated, and the Divine Essence Runic Symbols began to flash with light in his eyes. With each burst, the treasure's might would grow stronger!

"Malicious spirit!" Su Ming roared.

The malicious spirit instantly turned around with the scale in hand, and its body swelled up limitlessly. The scale in its hand also grew bigger; its size and strength would depend on how much Divine Essence Su Ming possessed. If he possessed a sufficient amount of Divine Essence, then it could grow endlessly!

He formed a seal with his hand and said in a cold voice once again, "Weigh the elephant!"

The malicious spirit roared. As its body grew bigger, it lifted the scale, and with a swing, the elephant landed on the scale pan. Dao Avenue Mountain turned into the weight.

"This elephant... weighs eight maces and seven taels!"

After having this malicious spirit weigh the elephant several times, Su Ming could already figure out some patterns in it. When that spirit weighed the elephant, it would be

better if it was heavier, because the weight represented the amount of Divine Essence that had accumulated.

However, when it weighed their enemies, it would be better the lighter they weighed, because the weight represented how much of his opponent's strength he could reduce!

At that moment as the malicious spirit weighed the elephant and said those words, the gigantic elephant raised its head and let out a roar. It shot up and, with an indescribable speed, charged towards the giant in the sky.

It was fast. While wind blew against its face, it crashed into the gigantic body with a bang.

Booming sounds shot into the sky, and rumbles echoed in all directions. A large amount of ripples fell backwards in the sky. Su Ming coughed up blood. He fell backwards, and a brilliant light shone in his eyes.

"Divine Essence..." a booming sound said flatly. "Thou art a Succeeding Spirit... Still, thou wilt be buried in the void."

When the giant opened his mouth, while he still did not open his eyes, he lifted his right hand slowly and pushed it swiftly towards Su Ming. It rushed through the air towards him, and his fingers were so big that they gave Su Ming the feeling that he was facing off against a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death!

'Ecang!'

In the face of this life-threatening crisis, Su Ming summoned his Ecang clone without hesitation. He lifted his right hand and swung it forward. As he said that word in his heart, the world immediately roared, and a gigantic shadow manifested behind him.

It was a tree, the projection of Su Ming's Ecang clone!

Once the tree appeared, Su Ming's power increased exponentially. At the same time, the hand of the giant in the sky froze and stopped in midair.

"Ecang!" The giant opened one of his eyes in an instant.

It was a yellow eye with a vertical pupil. Its edge was burning in flames, and the giant glared at Ecang's illusory form behind Su Ming!

Su Ming did not speak. If he wanted to summon the Ecang clone to this place, then he had to first form the clone's projection. Only when the projection appeared could he use his soul as a guide to open a tunnel in space and allow his Ecang clone to come to this place.

At that moment, his projection was swiftly gathering together, but he still needed a dozen something breaths before he could open the tunnel in space.

“Ecang, an Ancestral Spirit who was fortunate enough to obtain eternal life in the ancient ballad... You... have also become so weak... The legend is true... Could it be that the legend is true...?” the giant’s left eye stared at Su Ming’s Ecang shadow.

“Every single time the cycle of an aeon ends, Old Man Extermination reactivates the power of reincarnation and creates the ballad for all lives once more... In that ballad, the slots for eternal life are given again... All manner of lives in the universe have the possibility of being added to the ballad... They will be sent to the Heavenly Ship and head to the vast sky. Then, when the cycle of an aeon ends... they will not be destroyed.

“You are so weak, and you have existed for much longer... Now... you have reached the end of your life.” The gigantic figure in the sky suddenly started laughing loudly. His voice was like thunder, and the right hand which had come to a pause in midair suddenly increased in speed to charge down.

Su Ming’s pupils shrank. When he lifted his right hand, he sucked in a deep breath. His Ecang clone needed several more breaths before he could arrive, and the arm of the person in the sky would definitely reach him beforehand.

Su Ming had already made preparations to enter the dimension in the fragment. With the dimension helping him, his Ecang clone could move through space and arrive in this area on time.

The black stone fragment’s presence spread out in his soul, faint black ripples traveling out. Right at the instant Su Ming was about to step into the dimension in the fragment, a change suddenly occurred!

At the instant there were ten thousand feet between Su Ming and the right hand, the hand froze once again. In fact, it even shuddered. The giant’s right eye flew open to reveal a crimson pupil with windstorms raging around it.

This was the first time he opened both eyes!

Disbelief appeared in these two completely different eyes. The giant’s right arm was not the only thing that trembled. His entire body shivered as well, and as it did so, the entire sky seemed to quiver. Ripples traveled outwards, and an excitement that had never appeared on the giant’s face before showed up.

“I can sense... Not just Ecang’s power... In your body... This is... This is... the Seed of Life Extermination’s presence! There is no mistaking this. I have gone to Old Man Extermination around thirty thousand times in the past and offered numerous offerings... but I never obtained a chance for my name to be written in the ballad...

“You are not Ecang... You are the precedent to reactivate Old Man Extermination!” As the giant in the sky trembled, excitement that could not be hidden showed up in his eyes. He pulled back his right hand quickly, and he swiftly turned his body in the sky so that he was no longer lying down, but standing up!

As he stood up, the sky roared. If anyone stood by his feet, they would be unable to tell just how tall he was, because no end of him could be seen... However, he did not stand up completely. Instead, he bent his body slowly... and knelt down before Su Ming to worship him!

“Please forgive my offense. Please give me the right to obtain eternal life once more... Please write down my name in the ballad you will reactivate. I am the Antecedental Spirit of Sand Earthlings, Suiyun Zhen Changlin.”

Su Ming was momentarily stunned. He quickly recalled the other name of the black fragment - Seed of Life Extermination. He also remembered the old and broken ship in the galaxy, along with the old man sitting on it, as well as everything he witnessed in the past.

“An ancient ballad...” An old voice seemed to echo in Su Ming’s ears.

1. Old Man Extermination: Someone who already appeared in ISSTH and RI.

Chapter 930: A Time for a Ballad

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

If the time the song was sung was the total time of a world’s birth and subsequent destruction...

... Then when the song ended, it would mark the moment when the world disintegrated... How... would you decide the rhythm for such a song?

If the time the song was sung was the total time of a person’s birth and road into death...

... Then when the song ended, it would mark the moment when the person’s life ended... Who... would you choose to mention in your song? How would you sing it to yourself?

There was a ballad that rang throughout the existence of a universe, until it was destroyed. During that period of time, the ballad was time itself...

The composer of the ballad could add names into the song so that they would be with the ballad and exist eternally. They would... never rot away and die.

In the ancient past, there were nine lives and four races whose names were mentioned in the song, and they became glorious existences during the cycle of their aeon with the ballad.

At the moment, the ballad had reached its coda. It had not ended, but it was nearing that time. The current moment was also the time for Old Man Extermination to write a new piece.

Su Ming looked at the giant in the sky kneeling in front of him. He looked at his gigantic body, but for some unknown reason, he saw a great wave of aura of death around the giant's body.

This was a living being that was so old he was nearing the end of his life. He was still alive, but at the same time, he was already a candle that had burned to its end. The flames of his life were about to be extinguished.

"Please write my name in your ballad... I am willing to offer you everything in my life..." The giant bowed his head while speaking in anguish.

At the moment he noticed that the person in front of him possessed Old Man Extermination's presence, he gave up all thoughts of attacking Su Ming. The Seed of Life Extermination was something that could not be snatched or wrestled over. If someone wasn't acknowledged by that seed, perhaps another could still snatch it.

But once the Seed of Life Extermination was reactivated and fused with the person it acknowledged... then while all people and all forces could destroy the person who was acknowledged, but they could not destroy the Seed of Life Extermination. They would not be able to fuse with it either.

The person who killed the acknowledged person would also lose the right to be written into the ballad eternally.

This knowledge was something that existed in the giant's memories from the ancient past.

Su Ming fell silent. After a long time, he imitated the actions of the old man he'd seen in the dimension and said in a calm and leisurely manner, "What will you offer?"

When Su Ming said these words, there was an ancient air to his tone. The black fragment in his soul spread out waves of ancient presence. That presence existed in Su Ming's soul. It had been slowly accumulating over time, and now, when it spread out faintly, he... seemed to have become the old man from the past.

The giant raised his head and cast his gaze on the ground. With a flash, the tens of thousands of Sand Earthlings on the ground let out shrill, pained screams. Their bodies instantly melted, and all of them turned into sand, forming sand dunes on the ground.

The illusory old man trembled. This change had occurred too quickly, not giving him a chance to react. In an instant, all his people had died. As he trembled, he wanted to retreat, but when the God of his people fixed his gaze on him, his body turned into sand, and he scattered into the wind.

His physical body, which was located far in the distance on the statue that was one hundred thousand feet, disintegrated as well. The statue, too, disappeared.

At that moment, there was no more life in the desert.

Grains of sand that looked like crystals flew up from the ground. Each grain of sand symbolized one life. They gathered together to turn into a purification vase that came to float in front of Su Ming.

"This is the source of life for the Sand Earthlings. It is my first offering. Please accept it." The giant stared at Su Ming with brightly burning eyes.

Su Ming met his gaze. After a moment, he slowly lifted his right hand to seize the purification vase in front of him. At the instant he did so, a black vortex appeared on his palm.

The vortex was not formed by Su Ming's will, but the black fragment in his soul had manifested it on his palm on its own. Once it devoured the purification vase, it even sent out a black thread.

That black thread instantly charged towards the giant. Once it fused with him, the giant shuddered. Excitement appeared in his eyes. He might have been certain that this person was the one who reactivated the Seed of Life Extermination, but there had still been a hint of uncertainty within him. Yet the moment he saw the black thread he obtained every single time he would get in the ancient past after he made an offering, the uncertainty in his heart disappeared. He became completely certain of the person's identity.

"My life has reached its end, but I can attack thrice for you. This is my second offering... It is also all that I can do now." The sand giant's voice was filled with age. As his words reverberated in the air, he looked as if he was waiting for Su Ming's reply.

"I can promise you that I will write your name into the ballad, but after you attack thrice, you must offer your Divine Essence... as the third offering," Su Ming said calmly.

"If my spirit is preserved, then I will have eternal life. I will fulfill my promise," the giant said in his ancient voice after remaining silent for a moment. His body gradually shrunk

down, until he turned into an earth's yellow sand bracelet. It floated over in front of Su Ming. There was an indistinct face on the bracelet, and that was naturally the Sand Spirit.

Su Ming looked at the bracelet. After some time, he picked it up. Once he placed it in his storage bag, he looked at the space around him. As of then, this place was filled with a dead silence.

After remaining silent for a moment, Su Ming rubbed the center of his brows. Everything had happened too fast and too suddenly just then. Many thoughts rushed past his mind at that moment, but he calmed his heart and started thinking about it with calmness.

After a long while, he instinctively touched the space below his neck. There was nothing there, but he seemed to be able to feel the black fragment. Everything about this stone was slowly revealed before him as he gained more experience.

“Seed of Life Extermination... Old Man Extermination's reactivation... composing the ballad...” The experiences he had went through in the dimension in the fragment surfaced in Su Ming's head. The ancient ship should be the Heavenly Ship that the Sand Spirit had mentioned.

After some time, Su Ming took in a deep breath. He no longer thought about the things that that left him confused and lost. He dissipated his Ecang projection and resolved the power he had obtained after fusing with his clones. Then, with the unconscious Xu Hui in his arms, he charged forward.

Several days later, Su Ming reached the end of the desert—now filled with a dead silence—based on the marks he had left in the past. When he stood at the edge, he turned his head around to cast a look at the desert behind him.

He could sense that the desert was moving towards death. There was no longer any life force there, nor any lifeforms.

He kept watching, and suddenly came to understand slightly why the black stone fragment was known as... the Seed of Life Extermination.

He remained silent for a moment before turning his head around and walking out of the desert. In front of him was a galaxy which was incredibly clean. When he cast his gaze on it, he could not see too much dust or rotten matter. It was like a calm swamp. He could vaguely see a planet at the forefront.

This was... a cultivation planet that had been split in two, as if it had been cut in half by someone. There were some parts of it that were still connected together, but when he looked at it, he found that it was a wasteland.

“When you walk out of the desert, what you see in the galaxy... will be my tribe.” Dijiu Mo Sha’s words before he left echoed in Su Ming’s ears. He stared at the broken cultivation planet and walked silently over.

He gradually got closer. In silence, Su Ming stared at the cultivation planet, and his footsteps became faster. He had no idea how much time had passed, but eventually, he closed in.

A decadent air of time filled the galaxy, causing people to be immersed in it, as if they would also become ancient beings from it.

Su Ming walked quietly. As he came even closer to the planet, he saw that there seemed to be endless debris on the left side, and among it was a broken statue.

When he saw the statue from the distance, a sharp stab of pain appeared in Su Ming’s heart. With one move, he instantly appeared on that cultivation planet and stood on a piece of black ground. In front of him was an endless stream of debris.

Death existed in the form of a bloody stench that persisted through the passage of time. The ancient air and silence were the only themes in this place.

The statue that stood erect among the debris had lost its right arm, but it was still... gigantic in size and covered head to toe in black fur. Sitting cross-legged on its head was an old man. He was dressed in a robe whose color could not be determined, and he had his head lifted to look into the distance.

He was also a statue.

Su Ming looked at the old man, then put down the still unconscious Xu Hui from his bosom to slowly walk over to the statue. He descended on the top and stood beside the old man, looking at the familiar face. Various memories appeared in his head.

The old man who loved changing his clothes when he ventured out of the ninth summit, the person who brought him to the land of the Shamans so that he could get used to the battlefield, the person who taught him the Art to clear his mind, and also the person who let him find a home in Freezing Sky Clan.

At that moment, he was right before Su Ming.

He stared at the statue with a dazed expression, then tears fell down from his eyes. He quietly knelt down and kowtowed nine times to the statue.

“Master...”

When his tears fell on the statue, they spread out and sank into the fine cracks, leaving behind only a wet mark.

“One thousand years ago, this was the place where I was born...” A deep voice echoed in the air. It came from an abandoned house below the statue, the thin man who was sitting there with a desolate air.

Needless to say, he was Dijiu Mo Sha.

He lowered his head and touched the house beneath him. His voice spread through the wreckage, and his words were filled with grief, nostalgia, and an anguish that could not be wiped away.

“The old man in front of you is our Patriarch. He did not like to speak, and most of the time, he would just look into the distance silently. The place he watched was the sacred mountain, the symbol of our tribe. Our patriarch called it... the ninth mountain.

“The patriarch said that he had five disciples in his life, and all of them made him proud. He believed that his disciples would someday be the center of attention of the entire universe so that their names would spread through the whole world and reach him even here.

“Which disciple of the patriarch are you?”

“My Master only had four disciples, and the mountain is not called the ninth mountain. It’s the ninth summit,” Su Ming muttered under his breath while staring at the statue.

Dijiu Mo Sha’s body trembled in a barely discernible manner. He raised his head slowly and directed his gaze at Su Ming.

“There are five stones in front of you. You can place your hands on them...”

Chapter 931: The Fifth Kiln

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

Love.

It is the pillar of support for people as they live their lives. It can be love between friends, love between lovers, familial love, and love born out of kindness. When they are shown to the world, they reveal uniform joy and grief.

Dark Mountain allowed Su Ming to feel the love for home. His elder gave him the love born out of kindness. His companions gave him the love between friends, and the women in his life allowed him to feel affection but not romantic love. All of these were Su Ming’s precious memories.

His love for the ninth summit was one between familial love and love born out of kindness. It had dissolved into his blood and was branded into his memories, turning into a form of warmth that was different from his mother's murmurs when he was swathed in darkness.

This love and warmth was the thing that allowed him to continue down his path when he closed his eyes in the darkness. In the end... he was still human. A person with flesh and blood.

Even if he had a limitless amount of divine abilities at his disposal, even if he had lived for many years and was now an ancient existence, even if he had already grown numb to killing, and even if his hands were stained with blood... when he closed his eyes, the things that came up the most often were still those carefree peals of laughter in Dark Mountain as well as the warmth he experienced in the ninth summit when he was protected by his senior brothers and Master.

But reality was harsh. It was as if it had reduced all of his longing into fragments filled with all sorts of twists and turns, and they were stranded in the depths of the swamp known as memories... He could stretch a hand into that swamp, but he would never be able to fish out all of them. He would only be able to drag out bits and pieces of those memories.

He truly wanted to use his divine abilities to freeze those scenes that were gone from his sight in the blink of an eye, but even if he could not freeze them, there would always be one small little stone that would fall into the swamp, causing faint ripples and giving a light tap so that he would remember.

There were so many things that happened in the past, which had now turned into a sigh that echoed in the air as he looked at his Master in this silent wasteland. Su Ming stared at the statue before him and sensed the ancient air about the statue... How could he forget this person?

Su Ming knelt beside the statue, and tears fell from his eyes.

Dijiu Mo Sha's voice entered his ears, then left. Su Ming seemed to not have heard him. He looked at his Master's statue quietly, as if time had stopped because of his stare.

When an unknown amount of time had passed, Su Ming lowered his head and saw five stones the size of his palm by his Master's feet. They were placed there and were connected to the stone statue of the giant. It was as if... they had existed since the statue was created.

Su Ming looked at those stones, and his gaze fell on the fourth stone. That stone had a slight, purple tinge, and it was slightly different from the other four. When Su Ming's gaze fell on it, he had a faint feeling that his soul was being led to it.

“Our patriarch left behind these five stones. He said... that if his disciples arrived someday, they would be able to find their stone among the five. If they can make those stones melt, then there would be no need to suspect them. They are his disciples,” Dijiu Mo Sha said in a low voice.

Su Ming stared at the fourth stone. He raised his right hand and slowly placed it on the stone. At the instant he did this, Dijiu Mo Sha focused his eyes on the stone and watched it attentively.

He saw a flash of purple. That purple light instantly surged into the sky and illuminated the entire sky. Su Ming's figure was fused into that purple light. When Dijiu Mo Sha looked over, he found that Su Ming's figure was only barely discernible.

Su Ming shivered. At the instant the purple light spread out, he sensed Tian Xie Zi's presence incredibly clearly. That presence seemed to be just around him, as if it had always existed in this place, just waiting for his disciple to arrive.

After a long while, the purple light dissipated. Su Ming stood beside Tian Xie Zi's statue, and the five stones on the ground had now turned into four.

“I, Dijiu Mo Sha, greet my fourth senior brother!” Once Dijiu Mo Sha witnessed this scene, he wrapped his fist in his palm and bowed to Su Ming without any hesitation.

Su Ming did not speak. His gaze fell on the fifth stone beside the statue before he turned his gaze towards Dijiu Mo Sha.

“What did you call me?” A fierce look appeared in Su Ming's eyes.

“After the patriarch arrived in Divine Essence Star Ocean, I became his disciple in name when he provided enlightenment for the Ninth Tribe. My patriarch told me about the divine abilities his four disciples have. Since you could awaken the fourth stone, then based on what the patriarch said before he left... you must be Su Ming!” Dijiu Mo Sha raised his head to stare at Su Ming.

“Of the four disciples my Master took in, I am the most ordinary of them all. My eldest senior brother is the Lord of Nine Li, my second senior brother is the King of All Phantoms, my third senior brother is above all runes and seals... what right do you have to become our junior brother?” Su Ming's expression was calm, but the fierce tone in his words had a faint, freezing quality to them.

He was no longer the teenager who was immature and who did not have enough experience behind his back. He had gone through far too many things and also had a deep understanding towards the cruelty of the world. He no longer trusted in someone easily.

Even if a person called him his fourth senior brother and was truly Master's fifth disciple, some sort of change might occur.

Besides, this was not something that concerned Su Ming alone. This was something he would have to share with his senior brothers. Acknowledging another junior brother into their mid was no child's play.

Dijiu Mo Sha remained silent for a moment, then said in a low voice, "I am very ordinary. Even when I was in my tribe, I was ordinary. I don't know why patriarch took me in as his disciple in name. Before he left, he told me his four disciples' names and told me to come to this place often so that I could wait for his disciples, who might come to this place someday."

Su Ming looked into the distance. If the cultivation planet had not shattered, he would have been able to see the ninth summit that was built on the planet from this spot.

"Why did this place fall to desolation?" Su Ming asked calmly after some time.

"The races surrounded and attacked us!" Dijiu Mo Sha's eyes shone with great killing intent and hate as he spat these words through gritted teeth.

"Why did they surround and attack you?" Su Ming asked faintly.

"Because the fifth stone appeared, and because our patriarch obtained it." Dijiu Mo Sha clenched his fists, and his voice echoed in the air.

Su Ming remained silent for a moment before finally asking, "Is Master... still around?"

"Around a thousand years ago, our patriarch took the fifth stone and led the four races away for us. We don't... know whether he is alive or dead... However, over the course of years I've spent conducting investigations in secret, I've found some hints. The four races have not obtained the fifth stone, and I believe that the patriarch did not die in the past," Dijiu Mo Sha told everything he knew while looking straight into Su Ming's eyes.

"What is the fifth stone?"

"Once you have that stone, when you are in the fifth ocean located at the core of Divine Essence Star Ocean, you can use it to point you in the direction... of the Fifth True World's key, which has been lost in the passage of time. With it, you can even step into the Fifth True World."

Su Ming fell silent again.

"How do you gain possession of the fifth stone, and how did it appear?" he asked while looking at Dijiu Mo Sha.

“There are two ways to obtain the fifth stone. One of them is to snatch it from the person with it. The other... is to wait for the activation of the fifth kiln.

“It is unknown when the fifth kiln will be activated. Sometimes, it will be activated once a decade. Sometimes, it will be activated once a century. Sometimes, it will need a thousand or ten thousand years or even longer to activate.

“Once the fifth kiln is activated, flames that will spread through the entire Divine Essence Star Ocean will burst forth. This is something that even the galaxies beyond Divine Essence Star Ocean will be able to see.

“The flames will burn continuously for a period of time. During that time, it will be a form of torture and trial for all living beings. We need to avoid the fire, or our bodies and spirits will be destroyed.

“But there are some powerful warriors who can head towards the fire and step right into the fifth kiln. In it, they might be able to obtain a great serendipity. Their bodies will become sanctified, as if they had been refined. They might also be able to obtain Enchanted Treasures. The hardest to obtain among them is the fifth stone.

“However, the possibility of death in there is extremely high.

“It is said that the fifth kiln is not a product of Divine Essence Star Ocean, but an Enchanted Kiln. When it burns, it can create supreme treasures possessing endless spiritual energy for the Fifth True World. It was in the Fifth True World, but once that disappeared, the kiln appeared in Divine Essence Star Ocean.

“No one can use it as their personal Enchanted Treasure. They can only watch it erupt time and again in the passage of time, and there are always people who step into it to search for serendipities.

“By now, this fifth kiln has become one of the four great mysteries in Divine Essence Star Ocean!” Dijiu Mo Sha explained.

“As for the other three mysteries, one of them is the vortices in space that occasionally appear in Divine Essence Star and have been in the galaxy since its birth. Once someone falls in there, there’s no way to get out. We call these vortices Divine Essence Star Ocean’s swamps. They might lead to another world that is not known to us.

“The second mystery is the endlessness of Divine Essence Star Ocean. Even if you manage to find the core, it doesn’t matter for how many years you move away from it, you will never be able to get out of Divine Essence Star Ocean. It’s as if this galaxy is the epitome of the word boundless.

“The third mystery is the place where all Ancestral Spirits were born. It is also known as All Spirits Hall. It is said that the secrets of Divine Essence Star Ocean’s origins are kept

there, but when All Spirits Hall appears, those who are not Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death cannot enter the place, which is why it is very difficult for people to know just what is inside.” Dijiu Mo Sha’s voice’s reverberated in space as he spoke about the secrets in Divine Essence Star Ocean.

Su Ming remained silent for a moment before he asked again, “Do you know where Master has gone?”

“The entrance to the Fifth True World. In fact, there’s a high possibility that Master is already in the Fifth True World,” Dijiu Mo Sha said without any hesitation.

Su Ming sank into a contemplative silence for a moment. Just as he was about to speak, a piercing whistle suddenly came from within Dijiu Mo Sha’s body. This sound contained two long whistles and three short whistles, giving off a very urgent feeling.

At the instant the sound came, Dijiu Mo Sha’s expression changed drastically. He turned around and looked into the distance. As anxiety appeared in his eyes, he also let out a bunch of sounds.

They were three short whistles and one long whistle, as if this was some form of language, and he was replying to whoever it was that made the initial whistle.

Once he made this sound, another sound came faintly from his body. This time, it was four long whistles and three short whistles.

Dijiu Mo Sha’s expression changed. Without hesitation, he moved forward, but after he took a few steps, he turned around to look at Su Ming. His usually aloof eyes now held a hint of complicated emotions and nostalgia.

“I finished what the patriarch instructed me to do—to come to this place once in a while to wait for his disciples. It doesn’t matter to me whether you acknowledge my status or not. I... Dijiu Mo Sha, am the patriarch’s disciple, and even if I die... my soul will be the patriarch’s disciple!” Once he finished saying this, a determined and resolute look flashed in Dijiu Mo Sha’s eyes. He turned his head around, turned into a long arc, and instantly charged into the distance.

Su Ming remained silent for a moment. Then, he looked at his Master’s statue before letting out a light sigh. With a swing of his arm, he swept up Xu Hui and took a step forward. His body instantly disappeared. As he had the Duke of Crimson Flame shift, he appeared right next to Dijiu Mo Sha, who was in the distance and was charging forward in a hurry.

“You...” Dijiu Mo Sha was taken aback.

Pursuit of the Truth #Chapter 932 - Common Sense -

Read Pursuit of the Truth Chapter 932 - Common Sense

Chapter 932: Common Sense

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

“What happened?” Su Ming asked calmly.

Dijiu Mo Sha remained silent for several breaths, then when he looked at Su Ming, his expression was filled with a hint of gratitude.

“The tribe is in danger. It should have been an invasion by the Hearers. After the patriarch shifted the tribe to this place from the inner parts of Divine Essence Star Ocean, we had to keep migrating over the past thousand years. We kept hiding from everyone. The four races might not chase after us anymore, but the minor races affiliated to them kept whittling down the number of people in our tribe ceaselessly,” Dijiu Mo Sha said through gritted teeth.

“From a tribe of nearly one hundred thousand people, we were reduced to less than one thousand people...”

“Take me to your tribe,” Su Ming said calmly.

Dijiu Mo Sha nodded. He moved, and blood fog erupted from his body, causing his speed to instantly increase by several fold. Su Ming took one step forward by his side, and with it, he had already traveled the distance.

They rushed on their way, and after about two hours, Dijiu Mo Sha came to an abrupt halt. He carefully observed his surroundings, then brought out a stone from his bosom. He crushed it and spread it outwards.

Immediately, in a spot not too far from where they were a vortex the size of a palm took shape. It sucked in the powder from the crushed stone.

“The vortices in Divine Essence Star Ocean might have their own mysterious aspects, but after years of investigation, the people here found that while some of the vortices are endless chasms that lead to unknown destinations, there are some vortices that are connected to others of their kind in Divine Essence Star Ocean.

“Once we find these safe vortices, they can be turned into a kind of natural Relocation spot. We can use them to make initially long distances no longer so far away.

“The records of these vortices in each tribe are the most important treasures, and we cannot let any outsiders learn of them. In fact, there are only a few members of a tribe who can have this knowledge.

“The patriarch used some sort of unknown method to discover the Ninth Tribe’s Relocation Vortices, and he discovered quite a number of them. The planet where our tribe was built was also shifted from the inner parts of Divine Essence Star Ocean to the periphery in this manner.

“In fact, if it was not because of the existence of these vortex tunnels, it would have been impossible for my tribesmen to continue surviving after being chased ceaselessly for the past thousand years. There are plenty of vortex tunnels the patriarch has uncovered which other tribes do not know of up to this date.”

Clearly, Dijiu Mo Sha no longer treated Su Ming as an outsider. As he observed the powder from the stone around him, he provided him with detailed explanations.

“When we return to the tribe, I will tell you all the vortex tunnels that have been recorded. It’ll be much more convenient for you to travel around in Divine Essence Star Ocean like this.” Dijiu Mo Sha’s eyes focused on the spot where the stone powder disappeared, then he raised his right hand to seize the air in that direction.

“Just touching the vortex with your body will be sufficient. When you’re being Relocated, do not open your eyes. We will be able to walk out of the other tunnel in about a dozen something breaths.”

Dijiu Mo Sha’s voice still echoed in space when his body was sucked into the fist-sized vortex. He was pulled inside straight away, as if the edges of that vortex were soft and bouncy, which allowed it to devour all matter.

A glint appeared in Su Ming’s eyes. After a moment of pensive silence, he took a step forward and touched the vortex. At the instant he did so, he felt that he was enveloped in something soft. Right when this feeling appeared, he noticed a powerful suction force that pulled him into the vortex with a bang.

Su Ming did not close his eyes. Instead, he kept them constantly open.

He could sense that his body was being moved by some sort of force leading him forward. Before him, he saw Dijiu Mo Sha, who had his eyes closed.

Aside from him, Su Ming saw... a colorful world. There were countless living beings that were like jellyfishes shining in this world while they floated around the area. When he looked down, he found no bottom. There was only darkness.

When Su Ming saw this, his gaze focused, and he saw six brownish yellow flames suddenly lighting up in a small region of the darkness beneath him.

At the same time, a furious roar came from the darkness. Right when that roar sounded, the colorful jellyfish-like creatures around him dispersed.

Immediately after, Su Ming saw the six flames burn up brighter in the endless darkness beneath him. They swiftly grew bigger, as if they were three living spirits swiftly rushing out.

“Close your eyes!” an anxious voice immediately said from a spot not too far away from Su Ming. That voice was belonged to Dijiu Mo Sha, whose body was moving forward due to the force leading him. Once he heard the furious roar, he kept his eyes closed, but anxiety appeared on his face.

Su Ming did not close his eyes. He instead continued looking at the endless darkness beneath him.

The six burning flames came increasingly closer. About six to seven breaths later, the furious roars turned into a powerful impact... and a horse that was entirely black and was stepping on flames appeared before Su Ming’s eyes.

The two-headed horse was black and had flames surrounding it. There was murder in its eyes, and the two dragon heads kept tossing about. Enraged roars reverberated in the air and charged towards Su Ming.

A powerful mighty pressure erupted from this foreign creature’s body, and it was so strong that Su Ming once again understood that becoming a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death was absolutely not the limit and did not constitute to someone being the strongest!

“Don’t look at anything... Ha...” Dijiu Mo Sha’s voice turned into a sigh in the end. His figure disappeared from the colorful world, and no trace of him could be found anymore. It was a telling sign that he had been sent out on the other side.

The black horse with two dragon heads drew closer. Its roars shook the air in all directions.

Su Ming could feel that the power drawing him forward was on the verge of collapse due to the tremors. He narrowed his eyes, but he still did not close his eyes.

Su Ming had grown incredibly fond of this horse the moment he saw it. The creature’s fierce presence matched well with his own murderous aura. When he saw it stepping on flames while on its way, this appearance coincided with a thought that had blossomed in the depths of his head when he had heard Dijiu Mo Sha’s words.

He was also extremely satisfied with its speed. It had only used the span of a few short breaths to reach this place from the seemingly endless darkness. There were no flaws in its cultivation base, either.

Su Ming's eyes were trained on the horse, without any attempt of hiding it, and since his thoughts were revealed in his gaze, the black horse with the two dragon heads felt provoked, which was a rare emotion. It also noticed Su Ming's intent to enslave it.

This caused the beast's roars to become stronger and its speed to become faster!

However, this was just a short Relocation to Su Ming. The period of a dozen something breaths had ended, and his body swiftly disappeared.

"You are mine." At the instant Su Ming disappeared, he said those words. He knew that the black horse would be able to hear his voice and would also be able to understand him.

He did not know whether anyone had said the same words to the black horse before him. If there was, then the effect of Su Ming's words would not be great, but if there was not...

... Then Su Ming's words would turn into a seed that would be planted in the black horse's heart. As long as it remembered that someone had said such words to it, the seed would exist in its heart.

This was Su Ming's Art.

It evolved from the Art that would exist if he believed in it, and it was also a divine ability that surpassed the Great Art of Berserker Seed in terms of standard.

"Roar!"

As the black horse's roars reverberated in the air, Su Ming disappeared from the colorful world. When he appeared, he was standing in the galaxy that belonged to Divine Essence Star Ocean. Before him was Dijiu Mo Sha, who had a wry smile on his face.

"Fourth senior brother, I am to be blamed for not telling you clearly earlier. You are... not supposed to see anything in the world within the vortex. Once you see it and its image is imprinted in your memories, you will be remembered by the strange power in the world within the vortex.

"Once you use them again, the living creatures you saw will not let you leave. Even if you manage to leave by a stroke of luck, if you keep using the vortexes to Relocate, your journeys will become increasingly more dangerous." Dijiu Mo Sha sighed and rushed forward. He was feeling anxious about his tribe's safety, and was also feeling a little sulky about Su Ming's previous actions.

Su Ming took a step forward before he suddenly asked, "Do you know why you are only Master's disciple in name and not his proper disciple?"

Dijiu Mo Sha was momentarily stunned.

"It's because I only have normal potential and am very ordinary..." Dijiu Mo Sha said in a low whisper.

"You're wrong." Su Ming shook his head. "Who told you that you are not allowed to open your eyes in the world within the vortex?"

"There's no need for anyone to tell me about this. It's common sense. It's a general piece of knowledge almost everyone living here knows. Those who open their eyes out of curiosity, before long, they are unable to walk out of some vortex. Too many of such incidents have happened over the years. I've seen more than you did..." Dijiu Mo Sha felt slightly indignant.

"Then has anyone managed to tame the creatures in the vortex and bring them out?" Su Ming asked.

"Never!" Dijiu Mo Sha said without any hesitation.

"You're wrong." Su Ming looked at Dijiu Mo Sha. He stared at this fifth junior brother of his, who he had not admitted verbally, but had already accepted slightly in his heart.

"Common sense is just a circle. If you believe in it, then it will exist in your life and limit your steps. It will limit everything about you. While it might be able to protect you... it will also limit your growth.

"It's not because of your potential that Master took you in only as a disciple in name. It's because you lack the courage to challenge common sense, or rather, you don't have the will to shatter common sense in you.

"Have you ever thought why Master would know more of these vortex tunnels than other tribes when he was in this place? Have you ever thought about why the four races are still unable find Master even when they have been pursuing him all this while?

"In fact, I am certain that the black giant Master is sitting upon is a fierce creature that you've never seen before. It's not a creature from Divine Essence Star Ocean, but you've never wondered where it came from," Su Ming said slowly, but when his words fell into Dijiu Mo Sha's ears, they turned into thunderous roars.

He knew full well that the patriarch's fierce black giant was indeed a living creature that he had never seen before...

"That fierce creature should have come from the world in the vortex. Master was able to discover more vortex tunnels than other tribes because he opened his eyes in the world within the vortex... and he even enslaved a creature from there," Su Ming said faintly.

Dijiu Mo Sha's feet came to an abrupt halt. He looked at Su Ming with a dazed look. His voice echoed in his heart, and every single word caused his heart to tremble. Only at this moment did he suddenly understand why, among his four disciples, his patriarch had spoken the most... about this fourth senior brother standing in front of him instead of his eldest senior brother, his second senior brother, or his third senior brother!

Chapter 933: The Flower That Sank into Darkness

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

When the fifth kiln appears in the world, its flames fill the entire Divine Essence Star Ocean. The boundless sea of fire burns all those who try to be disrespectful to it.

Only the powerful warriors who have practically eternal lives can charge through the sea of fire, and only they can head into the fifth kiln in the sea of fire to seek death, serendipities... and the legend of the Fifth True World allegedly existing there in fragmented pieces.

If a person could step into the Fifth True World, then all the resources of a true world, all the World Plane power there could be obtained by that person. Then they could turn the power of ten thousand worlds into the power of Kalpa Realm, and with one single move... become a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death.

This legend was about the fifth True World and the fifth kiln.

Yet since the past, every single time the fifth kiln had appeared, there were few who managed to walk through the sea of fire. To be able to do this, a person needed to have a deep understanding towards the original essence of fire. They would need to turn their bodies into fire... or at the very least, they would need to have a ferocious beast that can dance around with fire. Only then... would that person be able to move through the sea of fire.

Su Ming's understanding towards fire had not reached the state where he understood its original essence or was deep enough that he knew all the origins of fire and its full structure, neither did he have an understanding great enough that fire would appear out of nowhere when he breathed.

His understanding towards fire was only slightly greater than that of a normal person. After all... he inherited the legacy of the Fire Berserker, but to the current Su Ming, the Fire Berserker's level was a little too low. This level of understanding towards fire was not enough for him to be able to walk through the sea of fire when the fifth kiln was activated.

That was why he needed a fierce beast that could live even if it was swathed in fire!

This sort of ferocious beast could not be seen anywhere. All the fierce creatures in Su Ming's memories did not fulfill this requirement... but when he saw the black horse in the world in the vortex, its heroic bearing as it moved forward while stepping on fire had given Su Ming a powerful hunch the moment he saw it.

He had a feeling that this... was the creature that could allow him to move through the sea of fire. This was a ferocious beast that could let him look down on fire in the sea of fire!

That was why he wanted to obtain this creature. Before the fifth kiln was activated the next time, he wanted to make this creature his pet!

It would be incredibly difficult...

However, Su Ming had already made his decision. If this matter only concerned Lie Shan Xiu's disappearance, then he might hesitate. Even if he came forth to search for clues regarding the First God of Berserkers and guessed that there was a high possibility that he had entered the Fifth True World, Su Ming might still eventually choose to give up and return to True Morning Dao World.

After all, he still had not prepared himself fully.

However, Tian Xie Zi was now added into the mix, and this became incredibly important in Su Ming's heart. Besides, he also had a mind and heart to return to the Fifth True World and the Abyss Builders' homeland and have a look.

All of these things caused him to make his decision!

He wanted to wait for the fifth kiln to be activated in Divine Essence Star Ocean and obtain the fifth stone in the fifth kiln, then bring this stone to the fifth ocean in the core of Divine Essence Star Ocean, and from there... step into the Fifth True World.

'This is my path... a path that was already set for me when I descended into the Barren Lands of Divine Essence's Crimson Flame Planet... I tried to escape from it, but in the end, my path still led... to the Fifth True World.' Su Ming walked beside Dijiu Mo Sha and looked at the galaxy in the distance with a calm expression on his face.

'I could not escape from it not because there was a will that chose this path for me in the dark, but because I had subconsciously chosen this path for myself.' An ancient presence appeared in Su Ming's eyes. As he grew older, as he experienced more things, as he... He grew used to thinking, grew used to being alone, and grew used to being lonely.

Perhaps his world was not colorful and full of excitement. However, in this world where the strong preyed on the weak, there was a possibility for a rare peace in a person's life.

After all, he was only one person.

If the bald crane had not been with him, Su Ming did not know how he would have turned out by this time. Perhaps he would have gone to the extreme, become obsessive, or perhaps when he closed his eyes, he would have gained a presence akin to a blade, and when he opened them, shadows stained with blood would appear before him.

'Because I am someone from the Fifth True World...' Su Ming shook his head. He did not acknowledge this, but he could not stop that thought and feeling of wanting to take a look at the Fifth True World.

'Perhaps it's because of her...' Su Ming walked through the galaxy. It was dark all around him, bringing back the memory of the woman who had appeared when he was in Western Ring Nebula's foreign land. The woman who gave him an unfamiliar yet familiar feeling, who gave him a cold feeling but also one of warmth... his mother.

'Perhaps it is also for her...' Su Ming remembered the girl who had long since stopped calling out to him... his younger sister.

He had never experienced true love in his life, be it with Bai Ling or with Yu Xuan. Their figures were like willows in his heart. They drifted about in the wind, never able to fall on the ground, and even if they did... they would soon rise once more due to a passing breeze.

Because they were not the only ones who were willows. Even Su Ming himself was a willow without roots. He drifted about without a home and without a place in which he could stay.

If he had to mention one thing, then the only experience he had with love was the experience of having a crush when he was still ignorant towards love.

In the darkness of his emotions, it was a fleeting rainbow. It was akin to a sigh when snow fell from the sky and wind blew past, like snow that could not make a person's hair completely white even if the person continued walking under it... like how he had been unable to fulfill his promise in the past.

Some of his memories were now covered in a light layer of dust from the passage of time, and they were fragmented, no longer connected to each other.

'I... don't understand love, and neither do I... understand affection.'

Su Ming sighed softly. It turned into faint ripples in the galaxy, and sadness was contained in them. They were a blossoming flower that no one could understand as it revealed its loneliness in the quiet darkness.

Su Ming looked at the galaxy. He realized that as he grew older and gained more experience, he always subconsciously immersed himself in his memories, constantly turning his head back to look at all the things he regretted in his life.

"I'm old now... because I always think back on the things that happened when I was young. My young La Su, when a person is old, he starts to feel sentimental about his life, and only then does he start counting all the exciting things that had happened in the past."

In Su Ming's ears, his Elder's words echoed, brimming with mirth, but he had already forgotten the year and the season his elder had said them.

Time trickled by. Four hours later, six piercing whistles came from Dijiu Mo Sha's body, interrupting Su Ming's thoughts.

Those whistles were shrill and piercing to the ear, sounding like a shrill, pained scream. Dijiu Mo Sha's expression changed, and because Su Ming couldn't understand anything, Dijiu Mo Sha immediately brought out a medicinal core from his bosom. That core was pitch black, but when it appeared in his hand, it instantly started moving.

This was not a medicinal core. It was a black centipede that resembled the shape of a medicinal core after it had curled unto itself. A resolute look appeared in Dijiu Mo Sha's eyes, and with gritted teeth, he swallowed that centipede.

Once he did so, black smoke immediately rose from his face. The faint mark of a centipede appeared on his face, causing him to look incredibly ferocious.

"I'll be rushing forward and burning my life. The tribe is in grave danger. Once you walk past this galaxy, you will see a floating continent. That place... is where my tribe lies." Once he finished saying these words, black smoke immediately spread out from Dijiu Mo Sha's entire body. He lifted his head and roared, then with a speed he had never shown before, he vanished.

Su Ming's eyes focused. He had tried shifting before, but there was something incredibly strange about this galaxy at this particular moment. He could not shift. It was as if there was a natural barrier placed in this area.

At the instant Dijiu Mo Sha disappeared, Su Ming took a step forward and sliced through the galaxy like a bolt of lightning to charge into the distance. Right when he had traveled for about a dozen something breaths, he heard a barely discernible sound from the area in front of him - the seventh whistle!

He did not stop moving but traveled even faster. After the time it takes for half an incense stick to burn, he saw a floating continent in the distant galaxy.

There were uneven cracks on that continent, a telling sign that it had been separated from a planet after it had collapsed. On the fragment, he could see shattered mountains, dried up ground, and countless withered and yellowing plants.

He also saw... hundreds of ferocious beasts with blades growing out of their backs floating in the galaxy. They were hundreds of feet tall and had armor. On their backs were tall and lean figures whose earlobes drooped down to their shoulders.

There were thousands of people who had the same appearance around the beasts. There were also a large number of black insects of several dozens of feet big moving about in all directions. They had already formed a sea of insects that was rapidly spreading outwards.

Roars and booming sounds echoed in all directions. This sea of insects was spreading towards a mountain. Around the edge of that mountain were hundreds of people, and on their faces were despair. However, they did not back down and were continuously killing the insects in that sea.

There were also hundreds of people in midair who were casting divine abilities against their enemies in the sky, causing loud bangs.

Old people, young children, as well as sick and disabled could be seen on the mountainside. They were watching the sky and earth in silence with the expressions of people who knew they were about to die.

A loud bang echoed in the area. A crack appeared in the sky, as if it had been torn apart. Dijiu Mo Sha walked out of that crack in one swift step. Black smoke surrounded his body, and it turned into a gigantic ferocious centipede behind him. As it twisted its body, it opened its mouth wide against the sea of insects on the ground, and a vast amount of black fog instantly shot out of its mouth.

As that poisonous fog came out of its body, Dijiu Mo Sha's body immediately withered, but there was not a single change in his expression. The only thing that changed on him was that the killing intent in his eyes had grown stronger.

His appearance immediately caught the attention of the people standing on the ferocious beasts' backs in the distance. Compared to the usual practice of cultivators speaking to each other before they fought, this alien race that survived in Divine Essence Star Ocean did not speak even a single word when they saw Dijiu Mo Sha and recognized him. However, seven people did fly out, and with murderous intent, they charged towards him.

At the same time, the thousands of people in space lifted their hands. As they formed a seal, an innumerable number of black beetles from the sea of insects on the ground went mad. With a purple tint to their bodies, they rushed forward as if they had descended into madness, not caring about the poison fog corroding their bodies.

This scene was reflected in Su Ming's pupils in the form of a miniature image. He moved forward and closed in on the continent.

Chapter 934: Hearers

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

Hearers were a small tribe in the periphery of Divine Essence Star Ocean. There were about ten thousand people in the tribe, but only a few thousand of them were warriors.

If those who did not understand the distribution of the powers in Divine Essence Star Ocean saw Hearers for the first time, then perhaps they would think that this was a big tribe. However, those who truly understood Divine Essence Star Ocean would know that there were plenty of tribes like this one in Divine Essence Star Ocean.

They were like Dijiu Mo Sha's Ninth Tribe. Perhaps they were once a big tribe in Divine Essence Star Ocean. However, as time shifted its gaze away from them, they gradually fell into a state of decline until they could no longer survive in the inner parts of Divine Essence Star Ocean and could only shift to the periphery.

Only in this place could they continue growing.

All tribes with history behind them would have a complicated connection to the inner part of Divine Essence Star Ocean. Even though Hearers had already lived in the periphery of Divine Essence Star Ocean for a long period of time, they still had a close connection to several big tribes in Divine Essence Star Ocean. With just one order from those big tribes, they would send out all the warriors in their tribe along with the ferocious beasts they had been rearing for years to launch a siege.

As Su Ming watched this scene, he turned into a long arc that charged forward, as loud bangs erupted in space as he broke through it, drawing the attention of the Hearers to him. Yet when they turned their heads around, they only saw a blood-red shadow passing by them.

This was an arrow!

It was an arrow that had no corporeal form, as if it was formed from space itself. It had appeared in the people's eyes as a crimson shadow because once it had been shot out, it pierced through a dozen something people's chests, and the blood that was brought out from their wounds had dyed it red.

This arrow shot past thousands of Hearers in space and landed at the foot of the mountain, right on a black beetle that was corroding but still rushing forward with its mouth wide open to devour a member of the Ninth Tribe.

With a bang, the black beetle crumbled to pieces. The impact that was stirred up tumbled through the entire area, stirring up fog that pushed the member of the Ninth Tribe hundreds of feet back. After that, not a single living creature could be found in a circular area of one hundred feet around the spot where the arrow had landed.

There was only... a dozen something dead insects whose bodies had shattered due to the vibrations from the force that had wrecked their bodies.

There was also a person who stood with his back straight and his hair dancing in the wind in the area. He was dressed in a sackcloth and held a longbow in his hand. He also had a woman he carried close to his chest. She was incredibly beautiful, but her eyes were shut tight, as if she was deep asleep.

"Take care of her for me," Su Ming said faintly and loosened his grip on her. The woman was then sent to the member of the Ninth Tribe behind him, who had escaped death just moments ago.

This was a member of the Ninth Tribe whose face had turned pale because of how shocked she was by Su Ming's arrival. The danger her tribe faced had forced her to fight for her tribe even though she was a woman. At this moment, she almost instinctively took over the unconscious Xu Hui.

Su Ming's eyes were calm as roars surged through the area. This battle was an incredibly grand sight to others. After all, this was a fight between thousands of people, and there was even a sea of insects composed of tens of thousands of black beetles. However, this sort of situation was really nothing in Su Ming's eyes. Whether it was the war between the Berserkers and the Immortal sects when he was in the land of Berserkers or the recent battle against the Waves of Tears, the scale of those fights far surpassed the scale of this battle.

He stood in place. With his left hand holding onto the Sand Spirit's bow, he raised his right hand, and an arrow shot out. That arrow was still without form. As it sliced through air, it landed in the ground in front of him. Booming sounds reverberated in the air, and an area of one hundred feet shattered once again.

Su Ming did not hesitate and continued to fire arrow after arrow. Each one that he shot could turn an area of thousands of feet into a region of death when it landed on the ground.

For a period of time, booming sounds shot up ceaselessly in the battlefield. At one point, Su Ming leaped up from the ground and appeared at the peak of the mountain behind him. When he stood there, he drew the bow with his right hand, and arrows poured down like rain towards the ground.

He had sufficient cultivation base and a powerful physical body. Because of this, each arrow Su Ming shot felt as if it was a dozen arrows fired at full strength. It could be said

that when this bow was in Su Ming's hand, he could bring forth and even more powerful destructive force than the person who had previously held onto it.

Within a short period of time, his arrival and the arrows he shot caused an uproar among those of the Ninth Tribe and the Hearers. Those from the Ninth Tribe had excited expressions, and their fighting spirit had been kindled once again. The strength of Su Ming's arrows made it so that all land belonged to him. The sea of insects that was close to the mountain continuously disintegrated amid the booming sounds every time an arrow landed on the ground.

As the members of the Ninth Tribe in the sky executed their divine abilities, their morale was boosted. Occasionally, they would look at Su Ming who stood on the mountain. The image of that person with the bow was then deeply engraved into their eyes.

To the Hearers, Su Ming's appearance brought a disturbance to the battle, preventing the sea of insects on the ground from moving forward. Fierce, murderous looks appeared on their faces, and they glared at Su Ming with powerful killing intent burning in their eyes.

Dijiu Mo Sha roared, and the centipede which had manifested behind him immediately left his side. Once it grew to several thousands of feet big, it charged towards the thousands of Hearers.

Su Ming remained composed. When he shot out another arrow, the ground rumbled, and a deep pit of one thousand feet appeared. Then, he put down the bow.

If anyone looked down from the sky at that moment, they could clearly see that five thousand feet away from the foot of the mountain was a deep pit. It drew a line between the mountain and the black beetles!

Not a single black beetle could be seen behind the line, only the members of the Ninth Tribe. A dense sea of insects could be seen beyond the line, but not a single one took half a step into that line. They only roared and hissed furiously from beyond.

This line was drawn by Su Ming with his arrows. Within it was the remnants of Su Ming's aloof, murderous aura, along with a ruthless declaration that needed no words but could be felt by all manner of lives that possessed intelligence.

All those who step into the line will die.

Killing this sea of insects and all the Hearers was not difficult for Su Ming. This was a tribe that did not have even a single cultivator in Lunar Kalpa Tribe. The strongest that had appeared in this place was only in the later stage of World Plane Realm.

As for the other Hearers, their levels of cultivation ranged from Earth Cultivation Realm to the middle stage of World Plane Realm. This sort of tribe was completely unable to make Su Ming feel threatened.

He stood at the top of the mountain without saying a single word. However, his existence and his arrows were even more intimidating than words. It could make the sea of insects on the ground not dare to take even a single step forward. The rise in the magnitude of his presence with this action alone caused Su Ming to become an existence that could look down on the world in all the people's eyes.

“ROAR!”

The old man in the later stage of World Plane Realm among the Hearers in space let out a low roar which turned into two waves of impact. One of them landed on the ground, making the sea of insects on the ground even more savage and violent. Some of them then were no longer able to bear with the violence raging in them and the impulse to move past the boundary rose within them.

The other wave turned into a sound that rushed towards the hundreds of members that belonged to the Ninth Tribe standing in the air, as well as Su Ming standing behind them.

At the same time, the thousands of Hearers around the old man charged out. They turned into thousands of long arcs that rushed towards the mountain, the hundreds of members that belonged to the Ninth Tribe.

As they rushed out, the sea of insects on the ground let out a piercing screech stepped onto the line formed by the pit, intending to cross over.

The old Hearer in the later stage of World Plane Realm kept his gaze fixed on Su Ming. Killing intent shone in his eyes. He could tell that Su Ming was only in the middle stage of World Plane Realm, and he had already made a judgment that Su Ming was only this powerful because of that bow.

He believed that if he got close to this stranger, then with his power, he would immediately let him know the outcome of going up against the Hearers.

With a cold harrumph, he took a step forward. When he raised his right hand, a rattle drum the size of his palm appeared on his palm. The drum was white, and it was clear that it was made of bone. With one shake, rattles reverberated in the air. The sounds seemed to be able to permeate through everything. They spread throughout the area and fell into each person's ears. The sounds of the drum was not loud, but even Su Ming could hear it.

Almost at the instant he heard it, the old Hearer let out a ferocious bark of laughter, and with one move, he shifted, even though he was just in the later stage of World Plane Realm!

This was something that was almost impossible, unless he was like Su Ming and had the soul of a powerful warrior in Lunar Kalpa Realm by his side so that he could borrow the power of shifting from that person. Otherwise, it was incredibly difficult for those in the later stage of World Plane Realm to shift.

It was especially weird... since it was impossible to shift in this galaxy. Su Ming had tried it before. Yet now, the old man's body had vanished!

Su Ming's expression remained the same. Not a single hint of change could be detected on him. He watched the sea of insects rushing past the line. As they spread out swiftly, they stirred up a momentum that made it seem as if they wanted to push down the mountain from where it currently stood.

This time, Su Ming did not draw the bow. He raised his right hand, then dipped his head down to look at it for a few moments before pushing his hand towards the ground on the mountain.

With it, the world rumbled. The ground started trembling intensely. A gigantic palm appeared in the sky and charged towards the ground with loud a rumbling. The movement was so quick that in the blink of an eye, the palm had already reached the ground.

The entire land trembled. Booming sounds reverberated through the world, shaking the sky and earth at this moment. The black beetles within the sea of insects let out cries of despair, and their infestation immediately fell apart as they started fleeing in all directions in a frenzy.

It was also at this moment that distorted ripples appeared behind Su Ming. The old man who had previously disappeared took a step out of those ripples, and with a ferocious smile on his face, he raised his right hand, intending to strike Su Ming's back. His fingers were pitch black, and wisps of black smoke surrounded his hand, turning into the souls of black beetles. Just as he was about to touch Su Ming, he saw... a palm appear in the sky and saw the sea of insects collapsing. This scene caused his pupils to shrink and his expression to change drastically. It revealed shock and disbelief.

"Master... Master of Fate, Lives, and Death... This is impossible!"

The old man sucked in a sharp breath. In his shock, the thought of injuring Su Ming became the least of his concerns. Instead, as he filled with astonishment, he started moving back, as if the intention of harming Su Ming could not even rise in his heart anymore. The only thought he had was to get out of this place as quickly as possible.

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

Su Ming did not turn his head back. As his right hand fell, a loud, deafening bang instantly came from the ground and drowned out the countless shrill screams of pain that rose into the air. While echo lingered in the air, a shudder ran through the bodies of all the people who were fighting against each other, and as if they had been frozen, they cast their gazes at the ground. All of their jaws then fell slack, and shock on their faces could not be concealed.

On the ground was a huge handprint that had sunk in hundreds of feet deep. It was branded onto the land, and there was an innumerable amount of mangled black beetles in there!

That handprint was incredibly clear, as if a giant had placed his hand on the ground. On the edges of the handprint were the black beetles who had narrowly escaped death. Their bodies trembled, and they lay on the ground, not daring to move even a single inch.

They could sense a terrifying presence that could destroy their entire race coming from that handprint, and it was a mighty pressure that was impossible for them to stand against.

Su Ming watched this scene unfold before his eyes calmly. The heart of the old Hearer behind him was trembling at that moment. He was retreating swiftly, filled with regret and terror. He was regretting that he had come so close to such a scary person!

He was frightened by that palm which contained a will that he could not resist. He had never seen a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death in his life, but he had heard about the divine abilities possessed by the powerful warriors on this Realm. When he saw all that had happened, only the title of a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death echoed in his head; these were the only words that could describe Su Ming.

"Coming to my side is not something that you can do at will, and neither... is leaving," Su Ming said flatly.

The old Hearer's expression changed drastically. When he raised his right hand, the rattle drum appeared. As he shook it rapidly, he left in an instant. He had been already scared out of his wits by Su Ming's palm. If he knew that there was such a powerful existence in the Ninth Tribe, he would have never brought his tribe, no matter what.

This was no longer them hunting down the Ninth Tribe, but the Hearers bringing upon themselves a threat of extermination!

His pupils shrank. As he charged forward, he began fleeing desperately. He wanted to escape from this place. In fact, he could no longer care about the survival of his other tribe members here. He wanted to get back to his tribe as quickly as possible and have it migrate quickly to get as far away as they could from this place. If they slowed down even the slightest bit, then he believed that what would await his tribe would be complete annihilation.

Su Ming lowered his right hand, then struck his storage bag. The gourd immediately appeared and floated above his palm. Su Ming touched it gently a few times.

"Treasured gourd, please kill him," Su Ming said faintly, and eyes immediately appeared on the gourd before fixing themselves coldly on the fleeing old Hearer. A multicolored light instantly erupted from within, and a small person with a blade shot out from the gourd, charging over at its target.

After a moment, a shrill scream of pain rang out in the air, resounding swiftly in the battlefield which had fallen silent due to Su Ming's palm, attracting all of the people's gazes towards the source.

When the people of the Ninth Tribe looked over, their spirits were immediately lifted, but when the Hearers looked over, their faces turned stark pale. If Su Ming's palm strike to the ground had scared the Hearers out of their wits, pushed their fighting spirit into the dumps, and gave rise to incredible terror within their hearts, then the sight of the old Hearer being beheaded was like a funeral bell that struck fiercely in all the Hearers' hearts.

"Elder!"

"Run! Get out of here quickly!"

After being stunned for a moment, a commotion rose among them. All of the Hearers were filled with limitless terror at that moment. Their minds instantly broke down, and all of them started withdrawing. All their minds were focused on only one word - Run!

"All members of the Ninth Tribe, heed my orders! Come with me... and kill them! The Hearers have been slaughtering our people for years, and this time... we will have them pay by several fold!"

Dijiu Mo Sha let out a roar, and monstrous hatred burned in his eyes. As he roared, the gigantic shadow of the black-furred giant manifested behind him, along with... Tian Xie Zi's figure sitting on its head, which brought Su Ming's eyes to him once more.

Roars immediately answered his call. It was an outburst that came from all the warriors of the Ninth Tribe after it had been suppressed within them for countless years. Hundreds of people flew out at that moment, turning into long arcs that charged towards

the sky before launching a crazed slaughter on the fleeing Hearers, who were now scattered and lacked any unity.

One party was fleeing in desperation, and the other was chasing them down in a frenzy while roaring. Clearly, this battle would not end within a short period of time, and the battle line would be elongated.

Su Ming stood at the summit and watched this scene, then sighed. He had no grudge against the Hearers, and with his principles, as long as they did not provoke him, he would not exterminate an entire tribe without reason.

This day was the first time Su Ming had ran into the Hearers.

However... once he cast his gaze on his Master sitting on the black-furred giant right behind Dijiu Mo Sha, who was chasing down the Hearers in the distance, a determined gaze appeared in his eyes.

He could change his principles for his Master.

'This is the tribe Master developed in Divine Essence Star Ocean. They were his companions through many lonely years.'

Su Ming raised his right hand. Once he formed a seal, he swung his arm in the air. With it, the totem on his arm that was the Duke of Crimson Flame instantly formed a fire cloud that appeared in an incredibly distant place. That spot was the border to the continent the fleeing Hearers have not managed to get close to just yet.

When they arrived, the Duke of Crimson Flame walked out from the fire cloud. His expression was aloof, and when he spread his arms open, he roared at the sky. With just one roar, a sea of fire spread out around him with loud booms. In an instant, a fire barrier was erected around the land.

This barrier was like a lock that completely cut off any chance of survival for the Hearers!

"No!"

"We're willing to pledge allegiance! We're willing to join the Ninth Tribe!!"

"Please spare us! All of this was the elder's orders, we had to come..."

Pleas for mercy, shouts of madness, and cries of despair instantly echoed in all directions, but all of them turned into pained screams that were drowned out by the enraged roars mixed with the intent for vengeance from those of the Ninth Tribe.

Su Ming closed his eyes and sat down cross-legged on the summit.

He did not want to join in this massacre. Helping the tribe kill the strongest person among their enemies and resolving the threat of the sea of insects' infestation was something Su Ming had done for his Master, but that was also all that he would do.

To Su Ming, who had already grown used to seeing life and death, whether this tribe could continue thriving and growing was of no importance.

Shrill screams of pain rose and fell in his ears. The stench of blood was thick and refused to leave. Once it collided with the sea of fire, it formed an unpleasant smell.

As time passed, the screams grew less in number, but at that moment, Su Ming's eyes suddenly flew open and he swiftly looked into the distance. His gaze was trained on a male Hearer who was fighting for his life against Dijiu Mo Sha once his path to escape was cut off by the sea of fire.

He had outstanding power and seemed to be either in the later or middle stage of World Plane Realm, possessing power of equal level to that of Dijiu Mo Sha. Their divine abilities rang in the air, and when their fight had reached its most intense moment...

Su Ming's expression remained as calm as ever, but he let out a cold harrumph. Dijiu Mo Sha could not see it, and neither could anyone from the Ninth Tribe, but Su Ming could see a fine crack appearing in the air behind that Hearer. It was swiftly tearing open, and in just the span of a few breaths, it would be completely ripped open.

Su Ming's harrumph did not travel too far. It only echoed a hundred something feet in the area, but the fine crack behind that Hearer that no one else could see abruptly stopped moving.

The Divine Essence Runic Symbols in Su Ming's eyes shone, and the world before his eyes seemed to have been frozen, as if it was due to the power of Divine Essence. It did not move, and was turned into a still picture.

Su Ming was momentarily stunned by this sight. When he looked over, the picture was instantly magnified before his eyes, as if it was moving. As it grew ceaselessly bigger, it looked as if Su Ming and the Hearer's distance was being reduced. It continued until Su Ming's gaze seeped through the man's body and landed on the fine crack in the seemingly normal air behind the man.

As Su Ming stared at it, the air was magnified endlessly. Once it grew several hundreds of times bigger, he saw a fine crack.

He magnified it once more, and when it was made several thousands of times bigger, that crack turned into a gigantic ravine. Su Ming's gaze shot through it, and he saw a layer of light.

It moved about in Su Ming's eyes until he saw a black piece of land.

On that land was a black volcano, which was erupting. There was a tribe that was formed of black towers at the foot of the volcano. Within that tribe were men, women, the elderly, and the young, but at that moment, all of them were kneeling on the ground and surrounding a statue.

That statue was an eyeball!

A feeble, frail old man with festering wounds all over his body was gasping as he circled around the eyeball with movements as if he was dancing. His eyes shone with hatred and anxiety, and complicated chants tumbled out endlessly from his mouth, causing a cloudy look to gradually appear in that eyeball, as if wind and clouds over the course of ten thousand years had just flashed past it.

Judging by the appearance of the people who were kneeling on the ground in worship, Su Ming could tell that they were Hearers, and this was clearly where the Hearers' tribe was located. As for that eyeball, it was definitely the God that the Hearers had been worshiping for countless years.

It was clear that they had sensed their tribe members' deaths and were worshiping their God, hoping that it would show them a miracle.

Almost the moment Su Ming's gaze looked towards the eye through the crack, a vertical pupil appeared on the eye that was being worshiped. That pupil was brown, and there seemed to be endless vengeful spirits struggling to rush out from within it, making it seem incredibly wicked.

The pupil turned around and instantly looked at Su Ming.

At the instant their gazes met, the pupil in the eye shrank abruptly, and a piercing screech reverberated in Su Ming's heart. With a bang, he tumbled out of the magnified version of the world before his eyes. The ravine turned into a crack, and when the world he saw was no longer a picture but had regained mobility, the burning of flames reverberated in the air, a bloody stench spread out, and the Hearer continued fighting against Dijiu Mo Sha.

Su Ming moved backwards, as if an invisible force had crashed into him, then a freezing glint shone in his eyes.

Chapter 936: Your Life

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

'A Divine Essence Treasure...' A glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes, and he swiftly stood up.

He clearly knew that he did not possess divine abilities which could make the world turn still and even allow him to magnify what he wanted to see, then be able to see fine details that he would otherwise be unable to see.

Even if he gathered Divine Essence in his eyes, he would still not be able to do this.

He had been stunned when it had happened. When he connected the pieces together at that moment, he knew that this was not his Art, but was due to Divine Essence in his eyes possessing some kind of connection with that eyeball that Su Ming did not understand. It was this connection that resulted in that divine ability, which he thought was incredibly powerful when he recalled it.

Su Ming's eyes shone. At the instant he stood up, he took a swift step forward. He was so quick that he appeared beside Dijiu Mo Sha and the Hearer in the blink of an eye.

Almost at the instant he arrived, a roar that echoed in Su Ming's heart came from behind the Hearer. Su Ming's footsteps faltered, but as the Divine Essence Runic Symbols in his eyes shone, he recovered, and the brilliant light in his eyes grew even brighter. Without even sparing a glance at the man, he walked past him, then seized the air behind with his right hand.

With it, booming sounds surged into the sky, and an endless amount of ripples instantly appeared in the air. Other people could not see it, but Su Ming could faintly sense that the crack in the air was swiftly closing up at that moment.

Immediately after, an even more powerful roar echoed in Su Ming's heart, showing faint signs of fighting against the power of his Divine Essence. When he connected this sound to the roar that reverberated in his heart, it was clear that it wanted to stop him from continuing. When he looked at the crack that was swiftly closing up, he was certain... that the eyeball worshiped by the Hearers... had noticed something terrifying. It sensed the threat Su Ming brought with him, which was why it refused the Hearers that had worshiped it for years, abandoning their tribe members. Instead, it chose to close the crack to prevent Su Ming from coming closer.

Roars that shook the sky shot up from the Hearers' tribe at that moment. All the tribe members surrounding that eyeball had their hands pressed against their ears, and as they screamed in pain, blood poured out of their eyes, ears, nose, and mouth. Some of them even died straight away.

The old man who was incredibly frail, feeble, and was covered in festering wounds found his expression changing drastically. He did not know what had happened, but he could sense the terror coming from the eyeball.

It was as if the eyeball had sensed an existence that left it uneasy, and at that moment, it was swiftly closing up the tunnel it had opened.

The eyeball's pupil was shrinking. The countless vengeful spirits in it were letting out piercing roars, because of which the Hearers either died instantly or let out pained screams, while Su Ming's heart trembled. Due to that, his body showed signs of stopping.

"Who is it...? Who is it that is terrifying the Malicious Eye!"

With faltering steps, the feeble old man went up to the eyeball and raised his right hand. He pressed it against the creature, intending to sense and see the person who destroyed his tribe's warriors and terrified the Malicious Eye to the point that it would not care about his tribe members' survival, going back against its promise to exterminate the Ninth Tribe.

On Su Ming's side, as his Divine Essence fought against those rumbles, he seized the air with his right hand, then yanked it swiftly outwards. His power erupted with a bang, and the air was immediately torn apart.

At the same time, a violent force erupted from the crack and charged straight towards him. As bangs echoed in the air, he instantly moved backwards, seized Dijiu Mo Sha, and brought him hundreds of feet away from the place. Then, Su Ming lifted his head swiftly to look at the crack he had torn open in the air.

Others would not find anything strange about this crack, but when Su Ming looked at it, he sensed that it was incredibly similar to that eyeball's pupil.

Su Ming's appearance and his subsequent act of seizing Dijiu Mo Sha to retreat stunned the latter momentarily. Soon though, he retreated without question himself as well. He might not know why Su Ming had suddenly come over, but the crack that had appeared behind that Hearer gave rise to a sense of danger within him that caused his heart to shiver. Because of this, he had an idea why Su Ming might have arrived.

As for that Hearer, he looked towards Su Ming with an enraged expression, but he did not move forward. Instead, he moved back swiftly, moving to touch that crack behind him.

Su Ming stood in the air and made no move to stop him. When he saw the man touching that crack and the desire to return to his tribe alive on his face, Su Ming smiled coldly.

At that moment, the man let out a shrill scream of pain. At the instant he touched the crack, he was not Relocated, but had all his vitality and his cultivation base sucked out of him. His body instantly withered away, and in the blink of an eye, he was reduced to skin and bones which soon turned into ashes.

Once the crack sucked out the man's life force, it began to close up right before everyone's eyes, just like how a person's wound would heal. During that process, it also retreated swiftly, and in the blink of an eye, only a fine crack was left of it.

"So... you are afraid of me." Su Ming moved forward and charged towards the rapidly closing crack.

"Let us... not interfere with each other..." A buzzing sound mixed with screeches and an old, ancient air travelled out swiftly from the rapidly closing crack. That sound echoed in the world and stirred up an endless amount of lingering echoes.

"Let us not interfere with each other, heh. If I was not powerful enough, would you still have said those words?" Su Ming asked flatly. He continued closing in on the crack, then raised his right hand and seized the closing crack once again with his fingers.

With a loud rip, the crack was torn open again. This time, Su Ming did not stop. While enduring the roars in his heart and the violent force charging at him from the crack, he rushed inside.

When he stepped into the crack, the roars from the Malicious Eye in the Hearers' tribe reached their most intense state. Under the barrage from that voice, the old man with his right hand on the Malicious Eye became the first whose body instantly dispersed... After him, all the Hearers around the eyeball immediately died wretched deaths. When they fell on the ground, their bodies withered, and they turned into ashes that vanished into the air.

All of their life force was absorbed by the Malicious Eye during that moment. The eyeball flew up swiftly from the now completely silent tribe formed by black towers and fled into the sky.

During that moment, at the spot where the Hearers died in the tribe, a booming sound rang in the area where the Malicious Eye had previously stayed. A huge crack tore through the air, and Su Ming walked out.

The moment he did so, he raised his head and looked at the hastily fleeing Malicious Eye in the sky.

"Become my eye..." Su Ming said calmly. He did not chase after it, but lifted his right hand and seized the air in the direction of the sky. With a loud bang, a huge hand appeared high above.

That hand was several tens of thousands of feet big, and it was swiftly charging towards the Malicious Eye to seize it.

"No!"

A furious roar came from the Malicious Eye. As it reverberated in the air, it stirred up a large amount of ripples. They crashed into the palm coming towards it from the sky. As booming sounds surged into the heavens, the palm crumbled and disintegrated. The Malicious Eye shot through then and left into the distance once more.

"You and I were fated to meet today..." When Su Ming said these words flatly, he still remained unmoving, but the Duke of Crimson Flame walked out of the air right in front of the Malicious Eye with the sea of fire behind him. When he raised his left hand, the sea of fire turned into a gigantic hand that rushed forward to seize the Malicious Eye.

"Damn it, I refuse!"

Within the cloudy and smoky hue of that Malicious Eye's pupil were countless malicious spirits roaring ferociously. Some of them had even rushed out of the eyeball to turn into endless ghosts. Quite a large number of them were Hearers, and they all rushed towards the fire palm the Duke of Crimson Flame had created.

At the instant they touched each other, booming sounds rose into the air. The fire palm fell apart and turned into endless embers in a sea of flame that plunged down to the ground. The Malicious Eye noticed a crack that did not have any flames in the plunging sea of fire, and in a flash, it shot out of there, looking as if it was about to fly out of Su Ming's gaze.

But Su Ming remained as composed as ever.

"... this is your Life," Su Ming uttered the latter half of his sentence calmly and completed what he had intended to say.

At the instant he said these words, a gigantic shadow appeared right in front of the charging Malicious Eye. That shadow was that of a tree, and it was... the projection of Su Ming's Ecang!

The appearance of the Ecang projection brought a presence that filled the world and turned into a suppressive force which made the Malicious Eye to let out a screech filled with despair.

"Ecang! Damn you, Ecang! You killed my original body in the past to offer it to Old Man Extermination in exchange for your eternal life... You ambushed me when I was at my weakest when I segregated my Malicious Eyes! If that was not the case... how could you have been my opponent?!"

"I... am the first eye that was born before even the universe was even created! I am the first eye that witnessed the rise and fall of the universe! I... I won't accept defeat!" The roars from the Malicious Eye were filled with an indescribable madness and hatred. It rushed straight towards Ecang's projection.

When it rushed over, it started expanding rapidly, and in the blink of an eye, it grew to be one hundred thousand feet tall and stood erect in the air. With a bang, it crashed into Ecang's projection.

However, at that instant, a hand stretched out of the Ecang's projection. Compared to the gigantic eyeball, this was an incredibly tiny hand. When it crashed into the Malicious Eye, a shrill scream of pain reverberated in all directions.

Booming sounds surged into the sky, but Su Ming stood his ground and remained still.

Once the booms subsided and Ecang's projection disappeared, a handsome, long-haired man dressed in purple stood in the sky with a presence that could allow him to look down on the world. In his hand, he held an eyeball.

The eyeball was currently gray, but there was smoke and clouds surging within it, as if the rise and fall of the universe was contained within its pupil.

Naturally, the purple-haired man was Su Ming's Ecang clone!

This was the first time Su Ming had successfully used his Ecang clone as a tunnel and his soul as a guide in Divine Essence Star Ocean to summon his Ecang clone.

"You are mine. This is... your Life," Su Ming and his Ecang clone said together.

Chapter 937: Her Hair Lifted by the Wind

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

There was nothing in the world that served as the true epitome of fairness. It was just like what Su Ming had said in the Yu Family in the past. He had already seen through this so-called fairness in the world.

Since there was no fairness in the world, then the law of the jungle was an eternal rule. It was no surprise then that the Malicious Eye had been ambushed by Ecang in the past when it was at its weakest and that Ecang had offered its physical body to Old Man Extermination in exchange for his name being added to the ballad, thereby gaining eternal life.

It was no surprise then that one of the eyes of the powerful creature in the past that had managed to escape by a pure stroke of life had returned to Ecang's hand once again. However, this time, the one who had orchestrated this was not Ecang's will, but Su Ming's soul.

His Ecang clone took the Malicious Eye and slowly placed it at the center of his brows. At the instant the eyeball touched his forehead, the world rumbled. Endless lightning bolts appeared out of nowhere and started spreading outwards in all directions from Su Ming's Ecang clone.

The sky looked as if it had been turned into a huge lightning net.

In this net was Su Ming's Ecang clone. When he slowly lowered his right hand, a new eye opened up at center of his brows!

It was a Malicious Eye that shone with a purple light! A Malicious Eye that exuded a strange and wicked presence!

This eye had a vertical pupil. Countless vengeful spirits struggled and roared at the edges of it, and some of them even spread outwards. Because of it, Su Ming's Ecang clone left the impression that he was absolutely not a good person. His appearance and the wicked air around him was enough to give a great impact to all those who saw him.

That impact would give rise to a thought within those who saw him, and it would be that they could not provoke this person for any reason whatsoever. They would also have a vague sense that he was filled with maliciousness.

The aura of it around him was so thick that it was already close to the peak of its density. If it truly reached the peak, then the word 'malicious' would no longer be capable of describing it. Perhaps a new word would then be created by all those who were shocked and intimidated by Su Ming's presence.

The Malicious Eye moved at the center of the Ecang clone's brows. The pupil looked swiftly towards the net of lightning in the sky, and with it, the lightning that filled the sky distorted, as if it was trembling, and within an instant... it vanished!

It was as if with the Malicious Eye, the Ecang clone's existence became a proud sun in the sky that not even the net of heavens could cover. When the lightning in the sky vanished, the Ecang clone lowered his head. Once he met the gaze of Su Ming on the ground, his body gradually disappeared. When not a trace of him could be found any longer in the area, he returned to Western Ring Nebula's foreign land and the one hundred thousand purple galaxies that belonged to him.

Once the Ecang clone left, Su Ming closed his eyes. At the instant he did so, a fine, purple line appeared at the center of his brows. That line was incredibly clear, and its appearance caused the wicked air that had always existed around Su Ming to become as thick as the one possessed by his Ecang clone.

He stood quietly on the ground and did not move as time trickled by. On the third day, Su Ming opened his eyes. He raised his head to look at the sky, and an incredibly peculiar feeling rose in his heart.

The sky was the same as it was three days ago. Nothing had changed. The world in his eyes was as it always was—a gray sky, a boundless galaxy that could be seen at the edge of the horizon in the distance. This unusual phenomenon in the sky was one that could only be seen in Divine Essence Star Ocean.

The ground was dry, and not a single hint of life could be seen on it. When he swept his gaze across the land, he saw only a flatland that gave off an air of stillness.

However, Su Ming could sense that he... was able to see more, and he could... see things that others could not see.

“Malicious Eye,” he said calmly.

At the instant he said these words, the thin, purple line at the center of his brows flew open.

This was not a thin line. This was... the projection of the Malicious Eye on Su Ming’s cultivation base clone and his clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole. When that eye opened, the vertical pupil and the countless struggling figures of the vengeful spirits were immediately revealed at the center of Su Ming’s brows.

Roars that could cast hearts in awe and terror reverberated around Su Ming intensely. However, they did not affect him this time. If there were other cultivators around him at that moment though, then the wave of impact from the piercing roars would definitely affect their hearts and bodies.

Those roars surged into the sky. Su Ming raised his head once more, and when he looked towards the sky, he saw a completely different sight!

He saw nine hundred something different skies. This was a scene that was incredibly difficult to put into words. It was as if there were nine hundred something people lifting their heads to look at the sky at the same moment, and the scenes they saw were all gathered into one person’s eyes.

Because of it, it could be said that he saw nine hundred something images of the same sky. However, it was not true. It wasn’t the exact same sky.

Soon after, when the nine hundred something skies in his eyes overlapped, the sight before him changed, and it was magnified by one-fold.

But it did not stop there. Once the sight was magnified by one-fold, it continued expanding like flowing water. Only when everything had been magnified by nine times their original size did it stop. At that moment, Su Ming saw endless fine particles in the gray sky. These particles were gray, and they were... the ones which gave the sky its color.

Perhaps it would be more accurate to say that this was not a sky, but a gray layer of fog.

Su Ming lowered his head and looked towards the ground. He saw endless fine cracks on the seemingly flat ground, many of which were continuously spreading outwards. However, no one else could see it.

This was Su Ming's Malicious Eye. Before it opened, it was a fine, purple line. When it opened, it turned into the first eye that had seen the universe's rise and fall!

Su Ming sucked in a sharp breath. The Malicious Eye at the center of his brows closed up and turned into a fine, purple line once again. A great surge of confidence rose in Su Ming's heart. This confidence did not come from his power, but from control!

Once he came to possess this eye, he was qualified to say that he could control all things.

He could control the battlefield, control all battles of Arts, and control all lives and death!

"There are nine hundred something souls in this eye, which is why it can magnify something up to nine times their original size. If that is the case, then the more vengeful souls this eye absorbs, the more shocking the extent to which the eye would be able to magnify something will become..." Su Ming swung his arm and, with a single move, turned into a long arc and disappeared from the ground.

.....

Several days later.

On the floating continent in which lived the Ninth Tribe was a mountain. In the middle of it was the tribe, and stone houses surrounded the entire mountainside. Nearly a thousand members of the Ninth Tribe were preparing food in the morning in the mid of chimney smoke.

Some children played around. Their naive and young laughter echoed in the morning, bringing rarely seen smiles on the adults' faces when they occasionally looked over.

The women in the tribe put down their weapons to take care of the elderly and the young, as well as to prepare food. The warriors in the tribe sat down and meditated at the foot of the mountain. They were all training there.

There were also a portion of the members in the tribe who went out to hunt. They had yet to return.

The entire tribe was brimming with an air of peace that came to them after the great war, and it was one that had been absent from them for a long time.

A line formed by deep pits thousands of feet away from the foot of the mountain showed how devastating the previous battle had been, and it had by then turned into a barrier.

Xu Hui opened her eyes on this morning and woke up.

When she did so, she looked around her in confusion. The last thing she remembered was a familiar figure. Right when this picture appeared in her head, she saw a figure sitting on a mountain rock outside the house. The sun was shining on him.

She could only see the person's back, but that back had already overlapped with the final scene she recalled.

"You're awake... the porridge in the Ninth Tribe is pretty good. You can eat some of it." When a familiar voice of the familiar figure reached her, Xu Hui lowered her head and looked towards the bowl of porridge that was still steaming hot.

Her face was still slightly pale. She averted her gaze from the porridge and cast her eyes on her own body. When she saw herself, her eyes focused. She saw that her robes had been changed to sackcloth, and she was wearing nothing else beneath.

Her wounds were healing, and her cultivation base was slowly beginning to reassert itself. The injuries she had suffered were too grave. They were enough for her to possibly lose her life. Even if she was currently recuperating, she would be unable to circulate her cultivation base for a short period of time. A sense of feebleness rose in Xu Hui's heart.

This sort of feeling was incredibly strange and unfamiliar to her. It was as if she had become a weak mortal.

She picked up the hot bowl of porridge, took a light sip out of it, licked her lips, then immediately began taking large gulps from it. Soon, the entire bowl was finished.

Her facial color regained a gained a slightly better hue, but the sickly paleness wasn't gone from her face. However, she felt much better than before. She slowly stood up, and her breathing quickened slightly due to that simple action.

With her hand on the stone wall beside her for support, Xu Hui walked out of the stone house and stood under the sunlight. She looked at the sky, then at the ground at the foot of the mountain, and breathed in the refreshing air.

Xu Hui lowered her head to look at Su Ming, who was by her side. She remained silent for a moment before saying softly, "Thank you."

"Don't mention it," Su Ming answered faintly while sitting on the mountain rock and looking at the sky in the distance.

"You were the one who changed my clothes?" Xu Hui suddenly asked.

"Mhm." Su Ming nodded.

Xu Hui fell silent once more. She did not continue standing, but sat down instead. She, too, looked into the distance. Mountain breeze blew past, lifting a strand of hair, but she caught it with her hand. However, the next moment, the breeze did not just lift up a few strands of her hair. Instead, it blew up most of it up, and she could not catch all of the hair with her hand. It was just like how her heart could not return to her usual, calm state, despite her quiet appearance at that moment.

"You have a nice figure," Su Ming said faintly with his face as calm as ever.

But when his words fell into Xu Hui's ears, she immediately looked towards him. Yet soon, she suddenly smiled elegantly. "Thank you."

Su Ming turned his head sideways to look at Xu Hui. He stared at the elegant smile on her face, and for the first time, he thought that this woman was quite interesting.

"But you have too many moles," he said calmly.

"Can't help it. My parents gave them to me, and I don't want to erase them. You'll just have to be bothered by it," she said lightly. She lowered her right hand, not bothering to continue trying to grab the hair that was lifted by the wind...

Chapter 938: Who Gave Rise to This Obsession?

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

It was dusk.

Su Ming watched the sun rise in this continent within Divine Essence Star Ocean, watched the sun set, and also saw evening arrive.

He could not explain this. This was supposed to be a completely pitch-black galaxy and was a continent floating in a galaxy, so where did the sunlight come from, and why was there daylight and nighttime?

However, there was indeed a sun here. Strangely, when he stepped into the galaxy, he did not see the sun, but when he stepped onto a cultivation planet or the continent the Ninth Tribe chose, he could see it.

Su Ming had asked Dijiu Mo Sha about this before.

“That is... the light and heat spreading out of the fifth kiln. Before the fifth kiln appeared, Divine Essence Star Ocean was pitch black. The darkness lasted eternally, and the people there had grown used to it.

“When the fifth kiln arrived, it brought light to Divine Essence Star Ocean. However, while we can see it, we can never find it, unless it appears on its own before us once in a while. Some people say that the fifth kiln’s true location is within the world in the void,” he had answered.

Su Ming sat on the mountain rock and looked at the sun that was the fifth kiln gradually set in the distance. When he looked at it, he could tell that the sun was indeed not round. Instead, it contained the outline of a kiln.

The afterglow of dusk shone on the ground with the warmth during the day, fusing together with the freezing wind that blew towards him. When it landed on his body, he could not tell whether it was warm or cold.

Su Ming had been sitting on the mountain rock for two days. His heart was calm, a sight rarely seen ever since he came to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. He could watch the sun rise and the sun set. Perhaps cultivators would not be used to the lifestyle of the tribes here, but to Su Ming, this place was brimming with familiar sights.

Humans always loved to reminisce about the past when swathed in a familiar feeling that they might have coincidentally ran into. They loved immersing themselves in that feeling to turn their heads back and look at their own lives.

The sounds of children playing brought back the memories of Dark Mountain Tribe. The friendship between the members of the Ninth Tribe made Su Ming remember the ninth summit. Not for the first time, he became aware that this was the tribe his Master had once lived in for many years.

Perhaps his Master’s image still remained in these people’s memories.

‘If eldest senior brother, second senior brother, and Hu Zi learned about Master and came here as well, it would be great...’ Su Ming shook his head.

The sun set, and night fell.

The area became quiet. The children’s playful laughter turned into even breathing. The elderly slept. The members of the Ninth Tribe started to either meditate or fall into deep sleep one after another, so the mountain became completely silent when night arrived.

Su Ming continued to sit on the mountain rock and look at the dark sky. He could not see the moon, and neither could he see any stars. The only thing he saw was endless darkness, as if he was the only person left in the world at that instant. It was a familiar feeling.

Since he was used to being lonely and knew that this was his grief-laden fate, then why was he still immersed in his memories and unable to free himself from them? Why did he always love to watch the black sky and have the fireworks of those beautiful moments in his memories be set off in his heart?

Since he was already used to walking down the path of his life alone, then if there was such a thing as a person having past lives, he would have definitely reincarnated plenty of times over tens of thousands of years.

Su Ming smiled in the darkness.

No one could tell that this smile was filled with anguish. Only the people who had smiled in this manner before would be able to see the heartache that seemed to have fused into the water when they looked at their own reflection in the lake, and only those who tasted that water before would know just how bitter it was.

"What's wrong...?" a gentle voice asked. It did not interrupt Su Ming's thoughts as he sat in the darkness but fused into the air quietly and surrounded him. A lovely figure dressed in a sackcloth walked out from the house and sat down by his side.

"I miss home," Su Ming replied softly.

"If that is the case, then we can leave tomorrow." Xu Hui looked at Su Ming in the darkness. She could only see the outlines of his face, but she liked watching him in this manner, because she knew that only at this moment was she looking at that person... and not Dao Kong.

She understood what was going on, but she did not want to say it.

"Do you believe in fate?" Su Ming shook his head.

After remaining silent for a moment as a few pictures flashed through her eyes, she gently said, "I do..."

"There are few cultivators who believe in fate." Su Ming looked towards Xu Hui.

"I do believe in fate, or else why would I be here?"

"When your wounds are healed, you can head to the nine old Frail Darknesses. I... still don't want to go home." An ancient air had seeped into Su Ming's voice in the darkness.

"Did you stay here to wait for my wounds to heal?" Xu Hui looked towards Su Ming.

"Sleep. I want to meditate alone here." Su Ming did not answer her, but instead told her to go and rest. There was no longer any ancient quality in his voice, and neither was there any nostalgia.

Xu Hui did not stay beside him. She stood up and walked towards the house, leaving the darkness for him alone.

“Perhaps you miss home, but you miss a person even more,” Xu Hui said from the house, her voice drifting into Su Ming’s ears.

He fell silent and closed his eyes, immersing himself in the darkness, and quietly meditated. He circulated his cultivation base, and in the freezing wind, he felt as if he had returned to the ninth summit, as if he had returned to the spot outside his cave abode, and was meditating there and watching the sun set and rise as he did in the past.

Cultivators did not dream.

Because dreams would only appear when a person was asleep, and deep sleep could be replaced by meditation for a cultivator. However, on that night, when Su Ming was meditating, he dreamed.

In his dream, he returned to the land of Berserkers. In his dream, he saw the ninth summit. In his dream... he also saw Dark Mountain. He saw the figures that existed in the forest, which was where his tribe was located when he was younger.

There was Xiao Hong. There was also... a beautiful girl filled with wild beauty standing alone under a big tree in the snow, dressed in a white mink fur coat. She was waiting in the snow alone.

She was waiting for a promise to be fulfilled. A promise of walking in circles with a boy.

Mountains aligned close to each other in the mountain range could be seen in the distance. The cold moon in the sky was indistinct. With the white snow on the ground and the pine tree as her companions, the girl continued standing in place and waited foolishly.

Snow, wind, and dust blew past her. Years went by. Was there ever any regrets within her?

Yet in those clouds were several galaxies and several layers of sky between them. No form of letters in the world could allow them to speak to each other any longer.

Thousands of years had gone by. No traces of anything could be found when water landed in a lake. The pine tree appeared the same every year. No one known whether beauty will eventually subside, and whether... still water will leave no traces behind when it disappears.

“You left me with a promise saying you will fulfill it tomorrow, and I have been waiting for you for a thousand years, but don’t make me wait too long. Don’t let this silence fade away.”

Su Ming opened his eyes, the soft murmurs from the dream still echoing in his ears. He suddenly came to an understanding. Perhaps he was truly not thinking about his home or that one person, but was thinking... about that promise he’d made one thousand years ago.

‘If this an obsession of mine, or is this an obsession someone placed in me?’ Su Ming watched the sky gradually brighten in the distance and the night be washed away by the streams of time.

‘Or else why would I always remember that promise instead of Bai Ling? Why... would I dream while meditating?!’ Su Ming’s eyes swiftly grew sharp from their previous dazed state. There was a piercing cold look within them, as if an ancient, ferocious beast had woken up from deep sleep and was exuding the presence that allowed no form of transgression against it.

A domineering air spread out from Su Ming’s body. With the first rays of sunlight shining on him, he stood up to move to the bottom of the mountain rock. His body was enveloped by sunlight at that moment, and with a turn, Su Ming trained his gaze towards the sky, from where the sun was shining.

The purple line at the center of his brows opened up and turned into the Malicious Eye. The clouds and fog in it turned into ghosts that looked ferociously towards the sky in the direction of Su Ming’s gaze.

At this moment, another Su Ming appeared in the sky, but in a way that no one else would notice it. This was his clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole after he had separated it from his body. The Malicious Eye had also appeared at the center of his brows, and he looked at the sky in the same direction as Su Ming’s cultivation base clone.

In Western Ring Nebula’s foreign lands was Su Ming’s Ecang clone, and he was sitting and meditating in the purple galaxy. Wrapped around his arm was the small Candle Dragon. Soon after both of Su Ming’s clones looked towards the sky, his Ecang clone’s eyes flew open, and the true Malicious Eye also opened at the center of his brows!

Once this happened, Su Ming’s Ecang clone turned his head around and fixed his stare at the spot Su Ming was gazing upon.

This was all three of Su Ming’s great bodies as he walked down the path of cultivation executing the power of the Malicious Eye at the same time. They let out all of their power at to look towards the boundless space.

Their gazes penetrated through space, as if they were moving through the passages of time. They moved past the area which the four Great True Worlds fended, moved past the entrance to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, and looked towards True Morning Dao World!

They saw the land that belonged to the Immortals in the gigantic galaxy there. At that moment, a war was raging in that place. It was... a war between Immortals and those from Morning Dao Sect. There were countless cultivators casting endless divine abilities.

Behind the boundless battlefield was a Rune formed by a tremendous amount of fragmented continents. At the center of it was a body made of flesh and blood that was just lying there.

There was a figure dressed entirely in a black robe standing beside that body. That person had his slightly withered right hand lifted and pressed against the top of the lying man's skull. Beside the first figure was another person who was also dressed in a black robe, but based on its shape, it could be seen that this was a woman. She was mumbling softly beside the body, her voice echoing in the area.

"... but don't make me wait too long. Don't let this silence fade away."

The woman's voice was gentle. There was a hint of nostalgia and a hint of grief within her words. At the instant she finished speaking, the tall person in black who had his right hand pressed on the top of the body's skull raised his head swiftly to look towards space.

With a bang, a powerful impact spread out of nowhere. The wind stirred up by the impact did not lift the tall person's robes, but threw off the hood of the woman beside him, revealing a face before Su Ming's eyes.

It was... Bai Ling's face!

Her expression and the grief in her voice were not matched at all. There was only an aloof look on her face, a calm expression that contained no shred of emotion.

Chapter 939: A Sigh That Came Hundreds of Thousands of Years Late

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

Su Ming's Ecang clone closed his eyes.

The clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole, too, closed his eyes along with Su Ming's cultivation base clone.

If his soul had eyes, then at that moment he witnessed the aloof expression on Bai Ling's face, they would have closed as well.

That was Bai Ling, not Bai Su. There was no way Su Ming would mistake it.

Cultivators originally did not dream, but Su Ming dreamed. When he woke up, he was in a daze, and he questioned just who was the other's obsession...

Perhaps she was his obsession, but perhaps he had always been her obsession.

He woke up from his dream, but he did not wake up. In a shattered space there was a ballad that sang about time. In the ocean of memories was a lone ship that slowly sailed to the sea in the sky.

'Who is she?' This question did not appear for long in Su Ming's heart before he obtained his answer. When he was still in the land of Berserkers, the three powerful warriors in Lunar Kalpa Realm sealed in Su Ming's soul had provided him with a picture. Within it, he'd seen a woman. She was Bai Ling, Bai Su, and also... the Sacred Lady of True Morning Dao World's Phoenix Sect.

She was also Xu Hui's senior sister.

'So this is the answer...But I am no longer the same person I was back then. The passing of one thousand years has allowed me to understand many things.' Su Ming shook his head. With a calm heart, he realized that his heart did not clench in pain, and he did not experience that feeling of being at a loss as if his heart had been devoured by the void.

It was as if he had been prepared for this answer for a long time. Even if he saw the truth at that moment, he was already used to loneliness, as if the more experience he accumulated, the less things in the world could make his heart feel as if it would be torn apart. By then, there was nothing that could break his heart.

Even if it was the girl filled with wild beauty he met in Dark Mountain during his early days planting an obsession in his heart. This obsession had been deeply rooted in Su Ming's heart for a thousand years, and when he met Bai Su in the ninth summit, it had grown deeper...

It was as if there was always a weak force that would lead him once in a while to remember and think about that white head, as well as make him recall that promise made in the snow.

'Bai Ling in her youth, Bai Su in her adult years... and also Phoenix Sect's Sacred Lady when she has become an ancient presence. What a powerful obsession. With each step, she connected more incarnations together and weaved a net that has lasted for a thousand years.

'I wonder just what it is about me that makes Di Tian and even the Sacred Lady from Phoenix Sect be so obsessed with me.'

Su Ming smiled.

If it was not for the Malicious Eye's presence, perhaps he would have continued lying to himself and refusing to think about the net of lies weaved to last for a thousand years. He had wanted to keep that beautiful and joyous moment in his heart and did not want to have it all be turned into a brutal reality.

He did not want to. He just did not want to...

But he woke up from his dream, just as if he had walked out of a material world.

When people are in materialistic worlds, they remember and yearn for each other, they do not forget each other. They think about each other, learn about each other... but never meet each other.

Once they walk out of that materialistic world, they do not remember, do not think, and do not learn about each other. They forget each other and only meet when they had become strangers.

If that was the case, then it was better to place no importance on separations and reunions. It was better to just smile and face the end that no words could describe, to wake up with a smile, to have less of an obsession and more of a sense of freedom.

If there was a promise, he would fulfill it one day, but he would just fulfill it to complete his life. He would not do so for another person.

Su Ming stood on the mountain with the sunlight on his face. His long hair rose and fell in the mountain breeze. However, that wind only managed to lift his hair and the corners of his robes. It could not move his heart.

It was as if the rising and falling strands of hair were Su Ming's memories. They were gradually scattered away by the wind, and the ones that could not be blown away were the dust that had been frozen in the sky.

Hence, his heart would also start freezing over, and those layers of ice would envelop him.

He would no longer long for anything good or happy. His expressions would become as cold as frost as his heart became frozen. Only at the bottom of his frozen heart, which no one could see, in an area where no sunlight would shine, he would find that it was not made of ice. It was wet, and as wind would blow past, drops of blood would fall, dyeing all the fallen leaves in the mountain red.

His love was over.

That first love of his, acquired when he was still ignorant of everything, was like a bud that did not come to blossom. In the end, even if it was a choice that came a thousand years late, it still chose to wither.

Su Ming smiled. There was no anguish in that smile, only a faint sigh that held a hint of an ancient air. No words were spoken.

He suddenly came to a realization. He had thought that the sigh he heard in the wind and snow in the past had come from none other than himself, but that wasn't fully correct. The sigh had indeed come from himself, but it had not come from him at that time. Instead... it had come from him at this very moment.

"So... even the sigh arrived hundreds of thousands of years late." As Su Ming smiled, he gradually began laughing until he was roaring. His laughter echoed between the sky and earth, filling the morning with peals of his laughter.

This laughter stunned the members of the Ninth Tribe, and they looked towards him. It also attracted Xu Hui's attention, and she cast him a sideways glance from the house.

"Fifth, do you have wine?!" Su Ming's voice traveled outwards with his laughter and landed in Dijiu Mo Sha's ears at the foot of the mountain. He was first taken aback, because this was the first time Su Ming had called him 'fifth'.

There was no way Su Ming would not understand the meaning behind that word. Dijiu Mo Sha shuddered, and excitement appeared on his face. He had been waiting for this day for far too long.

"Yes!" he shouted out loudly, and with a single move, he rushed up the mountain. Then, he turned into a long arc to instantly appear beside Su Ming. With a swing of his right hand, several pots of wine appeared beside them.

Su Ming picked up a pot, patted off the soil crust, and without even using a bowl to drink, he placed the pot to his lips and took a big gulp.

This wine was brewed by those in Divine Essence Star Ocean, and it was quite different from the ones drunk by the cultivators. The spiciness in it was like a hot wave that erupted swiftly in his body before it rushed straight to his brain.

However, it would not knock out a person, but would just affect their mind.

Dijiu Mo Sha also picked up a pot of wine and drank with Su Ming.

"If only life was as beautiful as it seems at first sight..." Su Ming put down the pot of wine and leaned against the mountain rock. His long hair spilled over his shoulders, and

there was an expression of indulgence on his face. Once he said these words with a smile, he took another big swig from the pot.

“Fourth senior brother, what does that mean?” Dijiu Mo Sha was momentarily stunned. He mulled over these words carefully in his heart, and the more he thought about them, the more he believed that there was something ancient to those words. They were heavy, so heavy that they brought a sense a depression with them.

“You won’t understand it.” The one who answered was not Su Ming, but Xu Hui, who walked out of the house with a pale face that gave an air of weakness. Her footsteps were light, though, and sunlight shone on her face, emphasizing her beauty that was like that of rainbow.

In that beauty was purity, age, and a form of gentleness.

“‘If only life was as beautiful as it seems at first sight.’ I’ve heard plenty of people say these words before, but no one had the tone as profound as I heard just now.” Xu Hui looked towards Su Ming and saw him drinking under the sunlight. Wine spilled out of the corners of his mouth, causing people to be unable to tell whether he was drinking wine, or whether he was treating that wine as anguish.

“When you’ve gone through the vicissitudes of life, experienced the changes in a person’s heart, lived through everything that you do not wish to face in your life, then you will sigh in when you are old and have walked through the path of your life.

“If all people and all things could return to their earliest moments when we first met them, then how good would that be? Because the beautiful moments in your earliest days will be memories that you can no longer live through again once you have been baptized by time.

“If only life was as beautiful as it seems at first sight...” Xu Hui mumbled and shook her head.

“You still have plenty of things you need to do in the tribe. you should go and do those things. I’ll stay and accompany... your fourth senior brother.” Xu Hui moved beside Su Ming and sat down. Dressed in a sackcloth, she took the empty pot of wine from Su Ming’s hand, then brought out another pot. She wiped off the soil crust on it, then placed the pot in Su Ming’s hand.

Dijiu Mo Sha fell silent. Once he wrapped his fist in his palm and bowed to Su Ming, he turned around quietly and left. When he did that, there was a look of recollection on his face. In his head were Su Ming’s words.

“If you want to drink, then I’ll drink with you.” Xu Hui picked up a pot of wine as well. With a gaze that could make a person calm down, she met Su Ming eyes when he turned his head towards her.

"I've already drunk one pot." Su Ming stared at Xu Hui with an unruly look in his eyes.

Xu Hui smiled. Her smile was incredibly elegant, and there was a resplendent air to it. She looked at Su Ming and lifted the pot of wine with her hand. Once she took a gulp from it, she quickly lowered the pot and furrowed her dainty brows. Clearly, the spiciness of the wine was beyond her expectations. A red flush appeared on her pale face, and she only recovered after some time. However, when she picked it up again, she drained the entire pot in one go.

Once she finished drinking, she placed the pot of wine by the side and lifted her head to look at Su Ming. There was a slight, watery look in her eyes.

"I caught up."

Su Ming stared at Xu Hui for a moment and lifted up the pot of wine to his mouth. Xu Hui sucked in a deep breath by the side, then picked up a pot of wine filled with wine again, as if she wanted to compete with him. Once she picked it up, she started taking large gulps.

She drank at an incredibly fast pace, and before long, she had already finished the entire pot. There was a smug look on her face, and when she looked at Su Ming, her expression immediately froze on her face. There was even hostility and slight anger in her eyes.

Su Ming lowered the pot of wine. He had only drunk a small half of it.

"We're done for the day. Let's drink on another day," he said faintly.

"No! I've already drunk two pots!" Xu Hui stood up in anger.

Su Ming cast a look at Xu Hui and retorted calmly, "I didn't ask you to drink it."

"You're not drinking, huh?" Xu Hui glared at Su Ming and nodded before she picked up another pot, and right in front of him, she finished another pot with loud, noisy gulps.

"... I don't drink with people with a lot of moles."

Su Ming's eyelid twitched. He turned his head around and put down the pot of wine. The wine was too spicy, and when Xu Hui arrived, for some reason, her presence calmed his heart, and he no longer felt tipsy.

"Su Ming!"

Anger raged in Xu Hui's eyes. With a single move, she picked up an empty pot and hurled it against the floor. The pot shattered with a loud crash. At that moment, she

could not circulate her cultivation base, and as a woman, drinking three pots of wine from a tribe in Divine Essence Star Ocean had resulted in her... getting drunk.

"What did you say?" Su Ming looked towards Xu Hui.

"I might have been unconscious, but I could still hear. I, Xu Hui, do not care whether you are Su Ming or Dao Kong. What I care is that you asked to drink wine, but you can't outdrink me! Now, drink!" A hint of scorn appeared on Xu Hui's face. She picked up a pot of wine and shoved it in Su Ming's face.

"You're drunk..." Su Ming rubbed the center of his brows.

"Are you going to drink or not?!" Xu Hui glared at him. Her body swayed, and a misty look appeared in her eyes. Yet she continued holding herself straight so that she would not fall.

"Let's drink on another date." Su Ming sighed.

"I drank THREE POTS!" Xu Hui shouted loudly.

Chapter 940: Change in True Morning Dao World

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

Su Ming had never seen a woman with such a personality before.

She was usually elegant with a hint of aloofness in her, as if she was a noble, solitary presence. Once she learned that Su Ming had changed her clothes, her expression had only changed momentarily before she quickly regained her composure. The lack of concern about the matter from her had made even Su Ming think about it carefully for a moment before he could tell whether it was genuine.

This was still nothing, though. Once she drank, the change of personality in her was so great that it stunned him.

Xu Hui's voice was incredibly loud. Her words echoed in the area, and when most of the members of Ninth Tribe heard it, they raised their heads and looked over. Dijiu Mo Sha sucked in a breath and felt fortunate that he had left beforehand. He did not expect that this woman would become so unreasonable once she started drinking.

"Fellow Daoist Xu, good job!" a woman's voice said from Ninth Tribe. There was a merry lilt to it, and once it was heard by many, other voices immediately started echoing in the air as well.

“Fellow Daoist Xu, you’re a warrior among women to be able to drink three pots of our tribe’s wine!”

“Savior, your wife has already drunk three pots, how can you not drink?!”

“That’s right, drink it! Drink three pots!”

“Three pots won’t do! She drank three pots and she’s a woman. Savior, you’ll have to drink nine pots!”

“That’s right, savior! We can’t lose to women! Drink nine pots for her! Savior, drink it!”

Most of the members of Ninth Tribe had learned from Dijiu Mo Sha that Xu Hui was a cultivator from beyond Divine Essence Star Ocean. Su Ming did not bother hiding it, since there was no need for him to lie about it.

The gratitude Ninth Tribe felt towards him could be seen from the respect they had showed him during the past few days. They had also showed great concern for Xu Hui. Based on Dijiu Mo Sha’s words, they had also deduced that Xu Hui and their savior were a couple; otherwise, why would they stay together?

Su Ming laughed wryly.

A smug look appeared on Xu Hui’s face, and she placed a pot of wine in Su Ming’s bosom. Once she did so, she turned around and wrapped her fist in her palm towards the members of Ninth Tribe at the foot of the mountain. She was beautiful to begin with, and once she became drunk, her act of wrapping her fist in her palm gained a heroic air. It was a bearing that could not be seen on her on normal occasions.

“Thank you, my friends from Ninth Tribe. I’ve drunk a little too much today, but I can still continue drinking. Still, I am unhappy, because even though I’ve already drunk three pots as a woman, your savior has stopped drinking after only half a pot,” she said loudly.

“It’s one and a half...” Su Ming was just about to explain himself when his voice was drowned out merry cheers from Ninth Tribe.

Su Ming shook his head. As he watched Xu Hui’s heroic bearing as well as the smug look on her face, a smile gradually appeared on his face. The sadness that had previously lingered in his heart disappeared without his knowledge, and the wound left in him due to seeing Bai Ling with his Malicious Eye slowly closed up.

“If only life is as beautiful as it seems at first sight...”

With a faint smile, Su Ming stood up and moved to stand at the foot of the mountain rock. Amid the merry cheers from the members of Ninth Tribe, he picked up the pot of wine, placed it beside his mouth, and started drinking.

The sounds of him gulping down wine echoed in the air. Soon, when he emptied an entire pot of wine, he wiped the corners of his lips with his sleeve, then raised his head and let out a long roar towards the sky.

His roar echoed in all directions. At that moment, in the morning sun, Su Ming seemed like a great dragon looking down at the world from the mountain while roaring at the sky.

When Xu Hui saw his figure, she started laughing as well. Her laughter echoed along with that of the other members of the Ninth Tribe.

“Another!” Su Ming shouted loudly.

Someone from the Ninth Tribe swiftly brought out more pots of wine and placed them around Su Ming, who picked up one of them, patted off the soil crust, and placed the mouth of the pot to his lips.

The wine was spicy and seemed to have turned into a ball of raging fire in his stomach. Some of the wine trickled down the corners of Su Ming’s lips and drenched his hair, giving him a domineering air.

“Another!” Su Ming put down the pot of wine and picked up another.

The fourth, the fifth, the sixth... and once Su Ming downed nine pots, his body swayed. As he laughed with his head thrown back, he fell to the ground with a thump.

He was drunk.

Xu Hui was also drunk, and her eyes gradually fell shut.

Su Ming could become drunk without worry, because he had the Duke of Crimson Flame’s totem on his arm. Besides, while his cultivation base clone was drunk, he still had his clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole in him as well as his Ecang clone protecting everything and the Malicious Eye keeping an eye on the area.

Which was why he could become drunk, and he needed to be drunk. If anything dangerous happened in the meantime, he could have his clone hold the threat back until he bought enough time.

Dijiu Mo Sha watched Su Ming and Xu Hui fall to the ground and shook his head with a smile. He personally carried Su Ming, then arranged another woman from the tribe to carry Xu Hui and sent the both of them into the house before placing them... on a bed.

Time trickled by. Su Ming and Xu Hui slept deeply in the house on the mountain that belonged to the Ninth Tribe. During that time, Su Ming felt that he had another dream.

In his dream, he felt that he saw his physical body, Di Tian, and also Bai Ling, whose hood was lifted, revealing her face.

He also saw the battle between the Immortals and those from Morning Dao Sect in True Morning Dao World. During it, he heard shrill roars as well as the booms from the execution of divine abilities, but those sounds seemed to be very far away from him.

Gradually, those pictures faded away. However, there was a woman who seemed to be in his bosom. She was very warm and delicate, and subconsciously, he wrapped his arms around her.

He forgot everything after that.

When the morning sun of the next day shone in the house, Su Ming opened his eyes.

He was first stunned, then when he moved his head to the side to look over, he found that he was the only person on the bed, but he did see a long strand of hair by his side. It did not belong to him. It was Xu Hui's.

Su Ming rubbed the center of his brows. Once he circulated his cultivation base, his mind instantly gained full wakefulness. He saw Xu Hui with her back turned towards him, and she was sitting on the mountain rock where he had previously sat outside the house while looking into the distance.

He could not see her face. The only thing he could see was the refreshing breeze lifting up her hair, making it dance and curve, drawing beautiful arcs in the air, just like the graceful lines of Xu Hui's back.

All of this was an incredibly beautiful sight under the sun.

Su Ming got up and walked out of the house. The tranquility during the past few days was a period of serenity that was rare in his life. There were no dangers, no killings, no deaths, no shrill screams of pain. All of this made Su Ming feel as if he had found the life he wanted to live the most.

In fact, a desire to live in this peace and quiet permanently rose in the depths of his heart. However, this desire could not stay in the wind. It did not matter whether that desire was willing or unwilling, the mountain breeze that blew towards it took it away without stopping for even a single moment.

This was something he had no control over. There were still plenty of things he had to do, plenty of regrets he still had not resolved, plenty of people, plenty of things... that Su

Ming worried over, preventing him from finding a place in which he could... live in permanent peace.

"May I see your true face?" Xu Hui did not turn her head. She had her back facing Su Ming when she said those words softly.

Su Ming remained silent for a moment. He closed his eyes, and when he opened them again, his face had changed. His clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole had replaced his cultivation base clone, allowing him to transform into a face that was completely different from Dao Kong's. It was... Su Ming's face.

Xu Hui seemed to have noticed it. She turned her head around slowly and looked at him in a daze. Then, a faint smile appeared on the corners of her lips. The smile was incredibly beautiful in the refreshing breeze.

"I know you. You are Su Ming and also Mo Su. One thousand years ago, you were a wanted criminal by the forces of power from the four Great True Worlds. When you appeared again, you caused a huge ruckus in the area where True Sacred Yin World was stationed and caused a Progenitor who is a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death to personally go after your life.

"But in the end... even he did not manage to kill you. Instead, he canceled the bounty over your head and tacitly acknowledged your existence.

"Su Ming, your name rings far and wide in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, and you are the person who gathered the most attention over the past thousand years. You are also the one person who Dao Kong wanted to bring to his side more than Ye Wang.

"I didn't expect..." Xu Hui shook her head and smiled.

"I didn't expect that you would have such influence in Black Ink Planet and turn something that is decaying into something amazing. You flipped the universe over its head and Possessed Dao Kong... the main organizer behind-the-scenes for Black Ink Auction was you, am I right?!"

"You are the master of Black Ink Planet. You control everything within Black Ink Planet, along with the auction, so you had them put that Sacred Constellation Robe on auction to lure Dao Kong into your trap!"

"I'm curious. How is it that not only the nine old Frail Darknesses didn't notice that you Possessed Dao Kong, but there wasn't even a single change in behavior among the fearless warriors Dao Kong controls with his soul?"

"In fact, nothing changed within the soul link formed by Morning Dao's Progenitor between Dao Kong and me. If it was not because there are simply too many things that are different between you and Dao Kong, and if it was not because of us having this

chance to be alone, I would have only been able to suspect but not obtain even a single proof to serve as evidence that you are not Dao Kong,” she said while looking at him.

“I still remember that there is a seal on Dao Kong that prevents the direct descendants of the Dao Family in Morning Dao Sect from being Possessed. This mark would attract the attention of the powerful warriors in Morning Dao Sect, since they want to be sure that none of their family gets Possessed.

“But you... How did you avoid being detected? In fact, that seal... is still in you. How... did you do it?” There was disbelief on Xu Hui’s face. This was a question that she could not find an answer for in the depths of her heart.

“You will not want to know,” Su Ming said flatly as he sat down on the mountain rock.

“Are you afraid that I will expose you after I learn of it?” Xu Hui suddenly asked.

“It doesn’t matter to me.” Su Ming smiled faintly.

Xu Hui fell silent. She knew that Su Ming truly did not care about it, because it did not matter whether it was his blood or his soul, everything about him showed that he was indeed Dao Kong. In this situation, no matter what she said, she would not be able to bring about an effect, and there were no benefits for her in this either.

Su Ming remained silent for a moment before he asked calmly, “What happened yesterday night?”

“You won’t want to know!” Xu Hui glared at Su Ming and turned her head around.

Su Ming frowned before his expression suddenly changed. He lowered his head swiftly. The sackcloth on his body changed instantly and returned to the appearance of the Sacred Constellation Robe. Once it did so, a great ripple of power spread out.

Xu Hui turned around swiftly. There was surprise on her face, along with a solemn expression.

“This is the interworld voice transmission for the direct descendants of the Dao Family in Morning Dao Sect!”

Right when Xu Hui finished saying this, a loud bang immediately came from Su Ming’s body, and a powerful ray of light that surged into the sky erupted from him. This powerful light spread out from his Sacred Constellation Robe. As it did so, an ancient voice began speaking.

“Dao Kong... the Immortals have revolted and broken ties with Morning Dao Sect... Make haste and hurry back from the Barren Lands of Divine Essence!”

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

“... There are 379 direct descendants who will participate in the activation of the ancestral temple in different batches. Once they inherit our ancestor’s glory, they will volatilize their blood that shows they are Dao Chen’s descendants, and your power will rise once more.

“Make haste and return!” The old voice echoed in the air, but the crowd did not hear it. Only Su Ming and Xu Hui could hear it properly due to the link they shared between their souls at that moment.

Su Ming’s eyes focused. He had seen the change in True Morning Dao World as spoken by the voice from the Sacred Constellation Robe with his Malicious Eye previously and could tell what was happening. Su Ming did not know the details of the break between the Immortals and Morning Dao Sect, which was why he could find no clues from what he saw, and when he could not find the cause for it, he could not imagine the reason behind why the Immortals would fight against True Morning Dao Sect. However, since they started a fight, they had to be confident in themselves.

Xu Hui’s expression also changed, because at the same time she heard the old voice from Su Ming’s Sacred Constellation Robe, a voice akin to a phoenix suddenly spoke in her soul.

That voice echoed in her heart and turned into a power that could avoid the link binding her soul with Su Ming’s. Once it formed a faint wall separating her and Su Ming, it uttered words that only she could hear.

“Hui Er... This is the first time I use this method to send a message to you. Do not panic, and do not reveal any clues...”

This was from her sect, the voice transmission from Phoenix Sect. Based on the fact that it could form a barrier that separated the link binding her soul to Su Ming’s, he should not be able to hear the message.

This was a force of power that Xu Hui had never known existed. She also did not know that her sect had the ability to create such a barrier!

This barrier was like a crack on a dam. In fact, with Xu Hui’s intelligence, she could already imagine that this so-called seal and promise to unite Phoenix Sect and Morning Dao Sect through marriage was not so firm that it could not be torn. A screen could be placed over the seal, and if that was the case, there was naturally a huge flaw in it. However, this flaw was usually hidden very deeply, and it could only be found during

crucial moments, thereby allowing them to break the seal and have Phoenix Sect leave Morning Dao Sect.

“Dao Kong is by your side. Don’t let him see anything off about you... When you were sent to Morning Dao Sect to be his wife, I felt deeply unhappy, but I could do nothing about it.

“The only thing I could do for you is to fight for a promise for you. Now... this promise is no longer important. Phoenix Sect has decided to break off from Morning Dao Sect. All the seals will be broken, and from now onwards... you will be free, and Phoenix Sect will be free as well!

“But you must kill Dao Kong. Your level of cultivation is much higher than his. Look for a chance and kill this boy. Once you do, hurry back to True Morning Dao World...

“Remember this. The boy Dao Kong is incredibly important to Morning Dao Sect. I did not notice how important he was in the past, but when I thought about it during the past few years, there seems to be a profound significance to Morning Dao Sect’s act in sending him into the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. I’ve only learned about this recently, but the one who ordered Dao Kong to be sent to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence... was the sleeping Kalpa Lord of True Morning Dao World!

“Your mission is to kill Dao Kong. I will help you break the seal once he dies.”

Xu Hui’s face was pale to begin with. Once she heard the voice in her soul, she staggered, and her face turned even paler when she looked over at her companion.

Su Ming narrowed his eyes. A brilliant light shone within them. Just like Xu Hui, a voice that only he could hear was echoing in his head at that moment.

This voice had similarly created a barrier that prevented Xu Hui from hearing the message.

“Kong Er, do not be in a hurry to come back. The voice you heard from the Sacred Constellation Robe just now was for Xu Hui, who followed you to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence.

“The woman’s sect has harbored the intention to rebel since a long time ago, and the hilarious thing is, they thought Morning Dao Sect did not know about it.

“Be careful. You can decide on your own whether to kill her. The nine old Frail Darknesses have a treasure specifically tailored to target those from Phoenix Sect. If this woman is on your side, you can relax, but if she harbors any other intentions, you can just kill her.

“With your intelligence, I will leave the choice to you without worry. Remember, Kong Er, do not return within a short period of time.”

The voices gradually faded away, and Su Ming looked towards Xu Hui. Their gazes met.

Xu Hui remained silent for a moment, then said softly, “My sect asked me... to kill you. They chose to break off from Morning Dao Sect. The Immortals are not the only ones who joined in the change within True Morning Dao World. Phoenix Sect is part of it as well. There must be other forces of power who have... also joined the rebellion.” Xu Hui rubbed the center of her brows. There was a slightly haggard look on her pale face.

“You’re still injured. You should rest,” Su Ming said plainly. He sat down on the mountain rock and did not continue with the topic.

Xu Hui remained silent for a moment before she looked towards Su Ming.

“Are you going back?”

“It’s still not time for us to go back.” Su Ming shook his head.

“... When are you leaving?” Xu Hui closed his eyes. After some time, she opened them, and a resolute look appeared on her face.

“With your injuries, you will need another half a month before you can recover from most of them. At that time, I will leave,” Su Ming answered her softly while he watched the sky in the distance.

“I will go with you,” Xu Hui said calmly.

Su Ming remained silent. After a moment, he turned around and looked at her. A long time passed before he nodded.

Xu Hui’s lips curled up into a faint smile, then she turned around to return to her house.

.....

As if he had already forgotten about the battle waging in True Morning Dao Sect at that moment, Su Ming lived on the mountain that belonged to the Ninth Tribe in peace. He watched the sun rise and set, and by his side was good wine as well as Xu Hui’s occasional company.

This sort of life passed by them like flowing water and was like a dream. It lasted from morning till dusk, then from night till dawn.

The two of them did not discuss anything related to True Morning Dao World, as if neither of them was willing to speak of it. Like that, half a month passed by slowly.

Flowers might not have bloomed and withered during this period of time, but the moon became full, then was reduced to only half of its full form. Half a month passed in just the snap of a finger. It could not be said that plenty of things had flourished and died, and neither could it be said that the stars had lost their brilliance. However... during this half a month, Su Ming forgot his frustrations and his confusion, as if he had returned to the mortal world.

Xu Hui's smiles had also increased throughout this half a month. It could be seen that she experienced the same things as Su Ming. The joy she felt during the past half a month was comparable to the happiness she had during the first half of her life.

However, happiness does not last forever. Joyous moments are always temporary, and all beautiful melodies are fated to end at some point since the moment they are started.

One day, it started drizzling in the sky above the Ninth Tribe. This was the first time Su Ming saw rain in this place. He did not want to use the Malicious Eye to see how this rain appeared, afraid that he would see too much and make rain lose its meaning.

When raindrops fell on the ground, they stirred up fog and dust. As these tumbled about, anyone who looked closely at it would feel that it was like a wave and have a sense as if they were surrounded by mountain fog. Anyone who saw it would at it quietly, and they would be unwilling to avert their gaze.

It was as if all the bitter and cold moments of life were subconsciously turned into merely grumbles in a book or a song that seemed to speak of something that happened many years ago as they watched the rain. The murmurs of the wind in the distance sounded as if someone was playing a xun, and it was strong enough to chase away the rain that filled the entirety of their field of vision.

Su Ming watched.

"Xu Hui." He turned his head around and looked at the woman who was packing their luggage in the house. Her hair spilled over her shoulders, giving her a gentle charm that made her look like a beautiful flower that had blossomed.

She turned her head around and looked at Su Ming.

"Sit there. Let me draw for you," he said faintly.

Xu Hui smiled light at him. She put down their luggage and did not even bother putting it back to her storage bag before walking over to Su Ming's side. She went to a mountain rock and sat down on it.

Behind her was the rain pouring down from the sky and the obscure land. Moaning wind blew past the strands of her hair, lifting up her dark locks that did not scatter away.

“You know how to draw?”

“I drew in the past.” When Su Ming spoke, he patted his storage bag. A drawing board immediately appeared in his head. This drawing board was not the item he had obtained when he was in the land of Berserkers, but was something he had come by coincidentally when he was in Black Ink Planet.

“Oh? How are your skills?” Xu Hui smiled, then lowered her head to look at her clothes, straightening some of the wrinkles on them.

“I can’t draw those with only a few moles, but I might be able to draw those with plenty of moles well. Don’t change your expression, you’ll affect me when I’m drawing you,” Su Ming said with a frown on his face when he saw Xu Hui’s expression stiffen.

“Su Ming, you’re going overboard!” Xu Hui stood up swiftly with rage on her face. “Just where exactly do I have plenty of moles, huh?! If you don’t tell me clearly today, I’ll fight you to death!”

“Do you really want me to tell you?” Not a single change in expression could be detected on Su Ming’s face.

“You-you!” Xu Hui sucked in a deep breath before she suddenly turned around and shouted at the foot of the mountain, where the members of Ninth Tribe were, “Dijiu Mo Sha, your senior brother wants to drink. Bring twenty pots of wine from the tribe over here.”

Dijiu Mo Sha had been meditating at the foot of the mountain. When he heard those words, his expression did not change. He constantly heard these sort of words during the past half a month and knew that his senior brother would definitely back down once they were spoken. There was absolutely no need for him to bring any wine up to them.

“You have no moles on your body...” Su Ming laughed wryly.

Xu Hui glared at him before sitting down again. She straightened her robes, then looked over with a faint smile.

Su Ming picked up the drawing board and opened his mouth to say, “You don’t have eight moles on your body,”

When he saw that Xu Hui’s expression had changed again, he raised his right hand, tapped the puddle of water by the mountain rock with his finger, as if he was dipping his finger in ink. Then, he drew on the drawing board.

The paper was clear, just like how his heart was calm.

A dash of ink gradually stained the paper with colors that seemed like they came from another world through Su Ming's hand, as if it brought with it the happy moments that remained in his eyes. The paper could no longer return to how it was at the start, but it gained a beauty that it had never possessed before.

When you gain something, you lose something in return. This is the way of life.

If only life was as beautiful as it seemed at first sight... The situation at that moment was like those words. However, there were certain times when the beauty that was initially seen could not compare to the peace gained after years had accumulated in a person's life. It was like this paper. When nothing was drawn on it, it was empty and blank. Once colors were placed on it after a person drew on it, which one exactly was the one that was more beautiful?

Only the person drawing would know.

Only those who had experienced such things before would understand...

Su Ming continued drawing. In the picture was rain, land, sky, and also the figure of a woman. The beautiful moments in the past when he was still in Dark Mountain remained faintly in his head, but as years went by, as wind and clouds continued changing, they became like dust which would fall on the surface of water and not leave a single trace or stir up a single ripple. They would not ruin the drawing paper.

The wind from beyond the mountains filled his sleeves. A beautiful lady sat before him in the rain. No emotions were present on his face, and neither did they enter his heart. This was a change of heart.

Pursuit of the Truth #Chapter 942 - You Are Already My Junior Brother - Read Pursuit of the Truth Chapter 942 - You Are Already My Junior Brother

Chapter 942: You Are Already My Junior Brother

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

Xu Hu's heart was trembling before Su Ming had even finished his drawing. She stared at him blankly, because she had discovered that once he drew his first line, he looked as if he had gained an ethereal air!

This made it seem as if his body had disappeared. In fact, he looked as if even his presence as well as his soul had vanished without a trace, but she did not notice even a single hint of it in the connection she had with Su Ming's cultivation base clone.

It was as if he was sitting there, but at the same, he did not seem to exist.

It was as if... he had fused together with the mountain, with the land, with the sky, and everything under the heavens that their eyes could see. He had even fused together with the rain and the wind that blew towards him. There was no distinction between them.

This was not him drawing. He was... imprinting everything from the wind, the rain, the sky, the earth, and everything else in the universe.

What caused Xu Hui to suck in a deep breath was when the ripples of power from Su Ming's body swiftly stirred up at the instant he reached that ethereal state before her eyes. Then, in a manner that shocked her, those ripples rapidly gained power!

Within a short period of time, he became infinitesimally close to the later stage of World Plane Realm from the middle stage of World Plane Realm!

This method of cultivation immediately caused a word to surface in Xu Hui's mind—Enlightenment!

This was enlightenment. Besides this word, Xu Hui could not find any other that could allow a person's cultivation base to erupt suddenly in this manner without any use of medicinal cores or training.

This made her remember a few sentences her Master had told her in the past.

"When the ancients trained, they placed primary focus on their hearts. They would continuously ask their own hearts and continuously try to understand the truth about the universe. It did not matter whether it was a great truth or a small one. Training their hearts was akin to training their psyche.

"They tried to understand the universe, and when they ran into enlightenments, their levels of cultivation would reach a state that defied common sense.

"Now, the method of cultivation we employ only places half of our focus on the heart, and the other half is on Arts. We might... never be able to reach enlightenment."

Xu Hui's breathing quickened, but she was incredibly careful in not bothering Su Ming in his drawing. The smile remained on her face, and she made sure that she did not move, because she was worried that if she did anything, she would affect his epiphany. Once he woke up from it, he would lose this serendipity.

She saw the ripples of power from Su Ming become stronger as he continued drawing. After a moment, thunder roared beyond the mountain as rain poured from the sky. The ground even started trembling faintly. A gigantic vortex appeared above Su Ming, at the top of the mountain. This vortex spread out in all directions, sweeping up rainwater and the mountain breeze to create an abnormal phenomenon.

The members of Ninth Tribe noticed it. As they raised their heads, they looked towards the vortex in the sky, and in doing so, they also noticed the ripples of power from Su Ming.

Right when an uproar broke out among them, they were immediately silenced by Dijiu Mo Sha. He stared at the spot above in a daze, watching Su Ming's back. His breathing quickened, and excitement appeared on his face.

'Change of heart. This is... the change of heart, the Art that Master once said belongs solely to his disciples!' Dijiu Mo Sha understood the change of heart and knew that this moment was incredibly important to Su Ming, which was why he did not just silence the commotion caused by the members of his tribe, he even personally began defending the entire area with a vigilant expression.

"I wonder when will my change of heart... arrive," he mumbled softly.

Time trickled by, and several hours passed since Su Ming began drawing. The rain in the sky gradually lessened and the wind too slowly became weaker. Xu Hui kept to the same pose. Even if rain poured on her body, she still continued remaining still.

She still had a smile on her face, but there was anxiety in her eyes.

She was not anxious because she had not been moving for several hours, but because she had seen Su Ming attempt to reach the later stage of World Plane Realm seven times during the past few hours.

But he failed every single time.

She knew deeply that there was a barrier between the middle and later stage of World Plane Realm. This barrier was incredibly difficult to break. She had been able to break that barrier in the past because her Master had helped her with all her strength, and only then did she succeed, albeit with great difficulty.

However, she believed that as long as Su Ming had enough time, he would definitely be able to reach a break and step into the later stage of World Plane Realm. Even if she did not know why he occasionally gave off a feeling that he was weak while at other times that he was strong, she believed this was related to him Possessing Dao Kong.

However, at that moment... Xu Hui could sense that the rain was lessening and the wind was gradually fading away. Once the wind and rain were gone, the sky would return to normal. At that time, Su Ming's picture would be finished.

If he still had yet to reach a breakthrough by then, his process of gaining enlightenment would end, and he would need another serendipity before he could continue.

Su Ming knew this.

Every single time a person experienced a change of heart with this Art, it would allow a their heart to go through a metamorphosis, and even their soul and everything about them would move to a greater state. However... even with this sort of metamorphosis to stir up his cultivation base, there was still a barrier within him. If he could not break through it, then he would be forced to stop in his tracks.

This was why Su Ming had chosen Dao Kong as his cultivation base clone. In truth, this cultivation base clone was like a vessel, and Su Ming chose it to make it easier for him to break through the barrier.

If he thought about it on a fundamental level, this so-called potential was really just how many barriers a person had in his path of cultivation, and how thick those barriers were.

This was why Su Ming had chosen to cripple Ye Wang's kismet. Once he destroyed the kismet in him, the only person who could have the kismet gather on his person for years to come in True Morning Dao World... would be only Dao Kong!

This was the reason why Dao Kong was so highly valued by Morning Dao Sect.

However, kismet was insubstantial. Very few could understand it completely and use it. Even Su Ming could not do it. He could only use his own method to change or move it about, indirectly guiding this kismet that existed in the unseen world.

Such as right then...

Bang!

A loud clap of thunder rang out in the sky. That thunder roared and shook the world in all directions. As it echoed, the rain that was about to disappear started pouring from the sky once more, and the wind that was about to fade away became strong once again.

The rain did not stop, the wind did not pause. All of them raged violently and frantically again.

Was this kismet...? Perhaps. Perhaps even without this so-called kismet the rain was fated to not stop, but if this rain continued pouring for several days...

Then perhaps this would truly be the work of the kismet!

The second day, the third day... until the fifth day arrived!

On the fifth day, rain still poured from the sky and continued falling on the ground. Dark clouds filled the sky. Wind raged in the mountains and blew violently in the world. Xu Hui sucked in a deep breath. During these five days, she did her best to keep still and not move, so that she would not bother Su Ming when he drew.

When dusk eventually arrived on the fifth day, Su Ming's cultivation base charged against that barrier once again, and loud banging sounds came from his body. A vast wave of power from his cultivation base erupted from within him.

That was not power of the middle stage of World Plane Realm... but the later stage!

Su Ming's cultivation base clone had finally stepped into the later stage of World Plane Realm and was at the same stage as his clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole. Only at this moment could Su Ming truly be considered to have moved into the category of powerful warriors.

All his clones could become an overlord of an area. When his clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole overlapped with his cultivation base clone before, Su Ming could bring forth power that was close to someone who had attained completion in the later stage of World Plane Realm. Yet right then, the power that would erupt from him would be one that truly belonged to someone who had reached great completion in World Plane Realm, and he had not even added his Divine Essence into the mix.

If he added his Divine Essence, he would no longer need to use the projection formed by Ecang's power to fight against those in Lunar Kalpa Realm, such as what he had done when he was trying to rescue Xu Hui in the desert. At that moment, even without using Ecang's projection, he would be able to fight against those in Lunar Kalpa Realm.

That was if he did not include his Ecang clone into the equation, if his Ecang projection appeared, Su Ming did not know just how great his offensive abilities would become, but it was clear that he would then be able to fight against those in Solar Kalpa Realm.

If his Ecang clone came personally and the three clones fused together, then with his soul linking them together, the offensive power that would erupt from him would be able to shock even the heaven. Su Ming would be even stronger than when he had first walked out of Western Ring Nebula's foreign land and broken into the galaxy where the forces of power from True Sacred Yin World were stationed!

Perhaps he could still not be considered as the most powerful person beneath Masters of Fate, Lives and Death, though. But if he took a step further and made his cultivation base clone as well as the clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows

Whole attain great completion in the later stage of World Plane Realm, then he would become the most powerful person beneath the Masters of Fate, Lives and Death!

If his Ecang clone devoured the other Ecangs, then his combat abilities would increase exponentially, and this... was the terrifying composition of power that came from the Abyss Builders' inborn ability.

Su Ming opened his eyes, or rather, he had never physically closed his eyes. The eyes he opened were those that belonged to his soul.

The sky instantly fell silent. There was no longer thunder. The rain disappeared, the wind faded away, and the sky was clear across tens of thousands of li.

Su Ming looked at the drawing board in his hand. On it was a picture of rain pouring continuously from the sky along with a delicate figure. Wind lifted her hair, and it looked as if a world was contained in her smile, causing those who saw it to be unable to help themselves but smile as well.

"Thank you." Su Ming raised his head and looked towards Xu Hui.

A faint smile blossomed on Xu Hui's face, and it was identical to the one in the picture.

.....

There always comes a time when people have to be separated.

There always comes a time when a song ends and people leave the theater.

On the second day since Su Ming woke up, he left the mountain in which Ninth Tribe was located, left the land, and left the near one thousand members of Ninth Tribe bowing down to worship him.

He did not take Dijiu Mo Sha with him, but instead picked up a map. It was a map detailing the locations of the four great races, which were ones who had surrounded and attacked his Master when he was in the inner part of Divine Essence Star Ocean.

If Su Ming had a grudge against someone, he would definitely take vengeance. This was his principle.

On his way out, he left behind some words which caused Dijiu Mo Sha to lower his head and bow to him.

"No matter what Master thinks, to me, you are already my junior brother."

These words caused Dijiu Mo Sha to tremble. He looked at Su Ming and saw a light shining with wisdom in his eyes, making it seem as if he could read his thoughts.

Slowly, an ashamed look that caused him to be unable to speak appeared on Dijiu Mo Sha's face. He quietly lowered his head, but those words still echoed in his heart.

This was Su Ming's acknowledgment.

When Su Ming first saw the five stones under his Master's statue, he could already tell that the fifth stone had been placed there later on. It might not have seemed as if it was different from the other four... but the four stones that signified the four original disciples were under his Master's feet, while the fifth... was placed away from his feet.

This small detail allowed Su Ming to understand plenty of things.

He could imagine a young boy many years ago standing by his Master's side and longing to have Tian Xie Zi as his Master, but up till the moment Tian Xie Zi left, he still did not take the boy his disciple.

Yet the boy did not give up. He protected his tribe and fulfilled the request Tian Xie Zi made before he left without any complaints or grumbles. In fact, as he grew over the thousand years, he treated himself as Tian Xie Zi's disciple and placed the fifth stone by the statue's feet.

This was why Su Ming had only said half of what he thought. He had the other half remain in his heart.

The complete sentence was: "Master will not take in a fifth disciple, but no matter what Master thinks, to me, you are already my junior brother."

Su Ming left. This time, the loneliness he had grown used to was no longer his companion. Xu Hui had taken its place.

The two of them turned into two long arcs that headed to the inner part of Divine Essence Star Ocean and the four races that had went after Master's life in the past. They gradually disappeared from Ninth Tribe's sight and vanished from Dijiu Mo Sha's eyes.

"Senior brother..." Dijiu Mo Sha mumbled. This was the first time no anguish appeared in the depths of his heart when he said these two words.

Chapter 943: On the Way

Who was it who was unable to see through the mirages of life, just like how the figures who have left into the distance remained as indistinct blurs in other people's eyes?

Who was it who saw through the beautiful moments of life, just like how Su Ming did not turn his head back to look? He merely watched the clouds around him as he moved, then with a smile, he lowered his head and snapped his fingers.

Perhaps the dust that flew up when he snapped his fingers was a brilliance that no one could see, but Su Ming knew that it would only last for the time he blinked, just like how one thousand years in the world would pass in no time.

He would no longer think about it, no longer reminisce. He would have those beautiful moments from the past remain forever at the bottom of his heart and not have them come into contact with the truth. He would retain his happiness, and also leave behind a fixation in others.

What he cut off was the love in his heart. What he did not cut off was the obsession fixed on him by someone else from the distance, a fixation that tangled itself around him.

‘I retained this happiness... but I’ve never been a person who would just allow another to scheme against me...’ A piercing, cold glare appeared in Su Ming’s eyes. He had not cut off his obsession because he wanted to... personally find the person who planted this obsession in him.

This was how Su Ming was. He would definitely take revenge for all the slights done to him, just like the reason he was heading to the inner parts of Divine Essence Star Ocean. Searching for clues about Lie Shan Xiu had become secondary. His true goal was to wreak havoc in Divine Essence Star Ocean.

He would have all the four venerated races who went after his Master’s life to pay what was due.

Su Ming walked calmly in the galaxy when he asked without turning his head back, “Have you killed many people in your life?”

“Quite a lot.” Xu Hui had recovered most of her cultivation base, but she still wore the sackcloth and did not bother to change her clothes.

“I haven’t killed that many ...” Su Ming said calmly.

Xu Hui turned her head to look at him with a slightly strange expression on her face. Forget the ones she did not see, just the Waves of Tears alone was enough for her to sense the murderous aura about his body.

If that was not considered a lot, then Xu Hui suddenly felt that she should have answered that she had only killed a few people in her life.

“The four venerated races have one hundred thousand something people each within the inner parts of Divine Essence Star Ocean. I won’t kill many of them... just thirty thousand something from each race,” Su Ming declared flatly.

Xu Hui remained quiet for a moment before she said softly, “If they can become a venerated race in Divine Essence Star Ocean, then the race will definitely have someone who is a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death among them.”

“There is one in each race. I know about that.” Su Ming turned into a long arc and charged forward through the galaxy. Xu Hui kept him company by the side. Once she heard his words, she smiled faintly and did not continue questioning him.

Since Su Ming knew of how dangerous this trip was but still chose to go, then he had to be quite confident in himself. After all, if he was not confident, he would be just walking to his death for no reason.

A normal cultivator would need a long time before they could arrive at the inner parts of Divine Essence Star Ocean from the periphery, and they would face countless dangers in their journey.

But Su Ming and Xu Hui could both shift, so their speed was exponentially faster. Yet even so, even if they were much faster, they would still need several decades to reach the inner parts.

However, the map from Ninth Tribe marked several Relocation Vortex spots. Because of that, they could shorten the distance. Based on Su Ming’s predictions, they would need only about ten years to be able to step into the inner parts of Divine Essence Star Ocean.

This journey wouldn’t be short. Based on Su Ming’s calculations, the distance from the periphery of Divine Essence Star Ocean to the inner parts would be the same as the one to the entrance of the Barren Lands of Divine Essence from this place. Such a great distance was a ravine that a mortal would not be able to cross even after he had been reincarnated thousands of times.

Thankfully, this time, Su Ming was not alone. There was a woman by his side. And thankfully... before this woman left Ninth Tribe, she had taken a lot of the wine when Su Ming was not looking.

Hence, Su Ming, who had already grown used to loneliness, was interrupted by occasional conversations which would fill the trip with a unique air.

“Just what happened that night?” On a day several years later, Su Ming sat cross-legged on a meteor flying rapidly forward. He looked at Xu Hui drinking wine by his side. At that moment, her heroic and valiant bearing gave Su Ming a feeling he could not put to words.

"You don't know what happened?" Xu Hui blinked and looked towards Su Ming.

The contact they had during the past few years seemed to have gone by with just the snap of their fingers, but the company she provided him for nearly one thousand days in the galaxy caused their relationship to become slightly different from before.

Su Ming cast Xu Hui a look and said faintly without any expression on his face, "I seem to have held something very soft,"

Xu Hui smiled faintly. She continued drinking for a time before picking up a pot and throwing it to Su Ming.

"Can you stop drinking like this all the time? You always get drunk." Su Ming frowned and picked up the pot of wine.

"Getting drunk is good. You can just leave on your own." Xu Hui narrowed her eyes into the shapes of crescent moons, and a misty look gradually appeared in her eyes. When Su Ming saw this, he sighed. He knew that Xu Hui had become drunk again.

After a moment, he hugged the sleeping Xu Hui and jumped from the meteor. This was not the first time he carried this drunk woman. Over the course of the past few years, he seemed to have grown used to this action.

Every single time she drank, she would not circulate her cultivation base to get rid of the alcohol, and every time she got drunk, she would fall into deep sleep. A smile would appear at the corner of her lips, causing Su Ming to feel as if he could sense the fatigue and the guard she put up against everyone in the past within her heart every single time he saw that smile.

It was as if... she could only sleep without worry when she was with him. Perhaps it was also because... she liked the feeling of being held by Su Ming after she became drunk.

He did not know whether she was doing it intentionally or unintentionally, but she wrapped her arms around his neck and buried her head into his bosom. Her long hair drifted in space, tangling together with his, and giving off a feeling that they could not be discerned from each other.

Perhaps this was what she wished for.

Su Ming moved forward quietly through the galaxy with Xu Hui in his arms. After the time it takes for an incense stick to burn, his footsteps suddenly came to a halt. He looked at the area around him carefully before raising his right hand and swinging his arm before him. A wave of air spread through the area and was then rapidly sucked into a spot that was about the size of a palm in front of him.

Su Ming's eyes focused. After giving the place a few scrutinizing glances, he took a step forward and headed into that formless vortex, disappearing without a trace.

This was not the first time Xu Hui and he used a vortex to Relocate on their journey to the inner parts of Divine Essence Star Ocean. Su Ming was already well-versed in using them. Within an instant, he appeared in that colorful world.

He did not close his eyes, but had them open. As his body charged forward due to him being dragged, he lowered his head to look at the darkness and the bottom of the colorful world, and in just a few breaths, a faint smile appeared at the corners of his lips.

A roar came from the darkness, shaking the colorful world. At the same time, the jellyfish like existences floating around Su Ming withdrew.

The black horse with two dragon heads rushed out from the endless darkness. The two dragon heads glared at Su Ming while panting harshly, and with a kick, fire instantly burned the entire area. The color of the fire was black, matching the horse's body and giving it an incredibly might air.

During the course of the journey, Su Ming had used the vortices to Relocate three times, so this would be the fourth time he saw this horse. Previously, every single time Su Ming appeared in the world within the vortex, the black horse would immediately notice him, and no matter how far away it was, it would use the unique method it possessed to swiftly reach him.

Furious roars echoed in the air. When the black horse lowered its head, it rushed swiftly towards Su Ming with the intent to kill in response to the earlier provocation.

Su Ming's expression remained the same. During the previous few encounters, he had come to know that the horse would always get a little closer each time, but it would not be close enough for it to kill him. Judging from the spot where it appeared, the horse would need seven breaths after he left the place to be able to close in on him.

"You are mine. One of these days, you will carry me on your back to ride to heaven and hell!" Su Ming smiled. As he spoke faintly, the black horse's roars became even stronger, and it looked as if it was about to reach Su Ming, but by then, he had already disappeared and left the world in the vortex.

Once Su Ming walked out into the galaxy with Xu Hui in his arms, he did not immediately move forward, but stayed close and listened attentively. Six breaths later, a faint rumble echoed from the vortex he'd left earlier.

"It's one breath short." Su Ming's eyes sparkled. After some calculations, he estimated that he would need at least three more trips to the world in the vortex before the black horse would catch up to him, and then, the time would come for him to capture it.

After mulling over this for some time, Su Ming looked at Xu Hui in his arms. Once he pushed her away, he shook her forcefully until she opened her bleary eyes.

"Wake up. It's your turn." When Su Ming saw that Xu Hui had opened her eyes, he let go of her, sat down, and closed his eyes.

Xu Hui rubbed her eyes and said with resignation, "You're cheating!"

"We promised each other that each of us would take the other and travel a distance. It's your turn," Su Ming told her without opening his eyes.

"Vortex Relocations doesn't count!" Xu Hui glared over at him.

"You didn't mention that before, so it counts. Are you a woman or not? Aren't you going to admit to what you said?" Su Ming opened his eyes and looked at her sideways.

"You know more than I do whether I am a woman or not," Xu Hui retorted without any hesitation.

With that one sentence, she managed to render Su Ming completely speechless for a long time and make him think that something seemed to have been reversed here...

In silence, Su Ming chose to just close his eyes and ignore her.

Xu Hui let out a light snort, then circulated her cultivation base. Once she chased away her drunkenness, she raised her right hand and swung her arm in the space before her. A fire phoenix immediately appeared under her. With a screech, it swept up the seated Su Ming and charged forward. Xu Hui stood at the top of the phoenix and occasionally looked around her as well as glanced back at Su Ming training calmly behind her before grumbling under her breath, "So petty!"

"I don't have any moles on me, so of course I'm petty." Su Ming opened his eyes for a moment, then closed them again.

"I know what you want me to say. I just refuse to say it." Xu Hui smiled, having uttered words that only Su Ming could understand.

Chapter 944 Them...

In True Morning Dao World, a battle that shook the entire true world so much that even True Sacred Yin World and the Emperor of Abyss' True World were paying attention to it had just started, and it was already incredibly devastating.

This was a great war in which almost every single race in True Morning Dao World had banded together to fight against Morning Dao Sect!

It could be said that Morning Dao Sect was surrounded by enemies on all sides. The rebellion had been started by the Immortals who had managed to get the other races working together with them by some foreign method, which caught the people from Morning Dao Sect slightly off guard.

However, Morning Dao Sect was a sect that controlled an entire True World on its own, so its strength was definitely not something ordinary. Once they fended off the first wave of attacks launched by the Immortals' Union, they executed a violent counterattack.

Roars surged into the heavens from the battlefields throughout the entire true world. Loud bangs became the constant noise in True Morning Dao World. Cultivation planets shattered and numerous people died, causing a bloody stench to fill every single corner of True Morning Dao World.

Within the Immortals' territory was a sect called Hundred Flowers Sect. Every single person in it was either handsome or beautiful, and in the Immortals' world, this place was considered a small sect.

Seven hundred years ago, a man had entered this sect. He was a person with gentleness and elegance akin to a flower, and he was fond of having sunlight shine on the profile of his face, fond of playing around with flowers and plants, and fond of... forming ambiguous relationships with the female disciples in the sect, because they always communicated with each other as if they were flirting.

Seven hundred years ago, he had been an inner sect disciple in the sect. Seven hundred years later, he became a core disciple, but he still retained his personality. He was likable, but there were some who felt envious yet could not do nothing about it.

Of course, that envy came mostly from the men.

His name was Hua Yan Yue.

A man whose family name meant flower.

"Yue Er..." A woman's resigned voice came languidly from a garden in the mountain where Hundred Flower Sect was located.

"Please call me second senior brother..." A man with long hair dressed in a white long robe stood under the sun, and with a smile, he looked towards the woman who had a mature and charming elegance.

"I am your Master..." The woman sighed.

"But seven hundred years ago, you were my junior sister." The man shook his head and walked next to the woman. He helped her tug a lock of hair behind her ear, which had been made messy by the wind.

"Just like what you said previously, the Immortals' Union has waged a war against Morning Dao Sect... and I've organized plenty of small sects based on your request... Seven hundred years might not be a lot of time, but it's enough to make thirty-nine sects become our affiliates." The woman lowered her head. She did not resist the man's actions as she spoke softly.

"Then... has my slot on the ship heading to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence been confirmed?" the man asked softly while blowing into the woman's ear.

"I can't confirm it yet..." The woman instinctively took a step back.

"It's alright, but those from Morning Dao Sect acting as garrisons in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence should have already been summoned back, right?" The man smiled softly.

The woman raised her head, and with puzzlement in her voice, she asked him, "Why do you insist on going to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence? That place is a prison..."

The man shook his head and looked at the sky, not speaking.

At the bottom of his heart was a string of words, and they were words he could not say to the woman.

'Because my youngest junior brother is there...'

.....

Within True Morning Dao Sect was a galaxy that did not belong to the Immortals. That galaxy belonged to a race called Heaven's Howlers. Within that galaxy was a huge sect, and if anyone saw it from outside, they would find that it was formed by endless swords. It floated in the galaxy and surrounded a cultivation planet.

There was an incredibly distinct building on that planet. It was a huge sword whose half revealed outside was already one hundred thousand something feet tall. It penetrated through the planet, and even the tip of the sword itself was one hundred thousand something feet long. From the distance, the planet and the sword were incredibly eye-catching.

There were three hundred cultivators dressed in black robes sitting cross-legged around the sword. These cultivators had hoods covering their heads and did not move, but a murderous aura that surged into the sky was brewing around their bodies, as if they

could cause the weather in the world to change and clouds as well as wind to surge the moment they stood up.

All of them appeared to be in the middle stage of World Plane Realm. In fact, any person could sense clearly that there was a seal contained within them, and if that seal was broken... no one knew just what sort of brilliance would explode from them.

Dong... dong... dong...

The beats of a war drum echoed swiftly in the area. As the sounds of the drum traveled outwards, the three hundred cultivators in the area gradually raised their heads.

Their gazes were all trained on the tip of the huge sword they surrounded. It might be blurry in their eyes, but a picture had already appeared in their heads.

In that picture were clouds that looked like they were hovering above the tip of the sword in the galaxy. Within those clouds was a person sitting cross-legged. Before him was a huge drum, and the beats came when he struck the drum with his right hand.

That person... did not have a head!

He was half-naked. His nipples served as his eyes, and his navel was his mouth. In his left hand was a battle axe of several dozens of feet. With his right hand clenched into a fist, he struck the drum.

He was known as Xing Gan by the people in the sect!

Seven hundred years ago, he had joined the sect, and during those seven hundred years, his level of cultivation rose at a pace that shocked everyone, but what cast them even more into disbelief was the fighting spirit this person possessed.

It was so strong that his murderous aura was so thick that it was enough to make a person feel as if they were cast into hell the moment they saw it. This was a Natural Fiend, a presence publicly acknowledged by all the cultivators in the sect.

The sounds of the drum were like thunder. As the booms surged into the sky, the headless Xing Gan stood up. At the moment he did so, his tall body caused the world to lose its color and all roars to fall silent.

Lightning crackled in the sky. As it illuminated the ground, the bolts of lightning formed a gigantic face in the sky.

"Heaven's Howler!" the headless man shouted out in a low growl that rumbled in all directions. His voice boomed in all directions and drowned out the thunder.

"You promised me that once I, Xing Gan, joined your sect, you would execute your divine ability and send me to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence!" As the man roared, the three hundred people under the sword stood up together. An indescribable murderous aura erupted from their bodies, and it was so strong that their presences connected together. A powerful aura then surrounded the sword. As it swept outwards in all directions, it filled the entire cultivation planet.

Anyone who looked over would find that the cultivation planet was surrounded by fog. It was formed from murderous aura, and it had manifested after the kismet in the place was chased away. Within that fog were countless vengeful spirits. There were men and women among them, as well as ferocious beasts and cultivators. They were all howling shrilly.

"Over the course of seven hundred years, I've killed one billion lives for you..." When the man at the tip of the sword said these words, the shrill cries from the illusory vengeful souls surrounding the cultivation planet grew even stronger. Needless to say... they were the one billion souls he had killed.

"When... are you going to send me to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence?!" he roared loudly.

At the instant he did so, the three hundred people on the ground raised their heads together and let out roars that shook the sky.

"When are you going to send me to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence?!" These three hundred people shouted in anger, and as they did so, the hoods over their heads were blown off by wind to reveal... bald heads filled with marks exuding the Shamans' presence. These three hundred people... were the souls of Nine Li!

The face formed by lightning in the sky remained silent as he looked at the man. In his eyes was a hint of high praise and deep respect. He then said in a low voice, "Once the war against Morning Dao Sect ends, I will personally send you to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence and help you search for your junior brother. If I go back on my word, then all Heaven's Howlers will face the disaster of extermination!"

"Alright..." the headless man at the tip of the sword agreed unhappily.

"Warriors of Nine Li, we... will go to war!"

"To war!" The ones who answered him were the three hundred people on the ground. Their roars surged into the sky and shook the lightning so much that huge waves of sound surged up.

.....

"Kill him!"

"Damn you, you bastard! How dare you ambush me?! I'll bite you to death!"

On a battlefield in the war between Morning Dao Sect and the Immortals' Union enraged roars rang in the air. Cultivators from Morning Dao Sect were all watching a man they had surrounded in shock.

The man was the height of three average men. He was abnormally built, and he had endless strength. The tiger skin he wore made it seem like he was a ferocious beast in the shape of a tiger from the distance, or maybe the manifestation of a tiger spirit.

At that moment, he had his teeth snapped tightly shut on a young cultivator who he had seized with his right hand. As the cultivator screamed in shrilly from pain, the tiger person ripped off a layer of his flesh, and with blood filling his mouth, he threw his head back and laughed.

"I don't even need to Enter any Dreams to kill every single one of you damn bastards! How dare you ambush me?! If you force me to a corner, I'll drag you all into my Dream!" The man lifted the cultivator in his hand, and with a roar, rushed at the people from Morning Dao Sect.

If he was just a reckless person, the cultivators would not have bothered with him, but as he moved forward, Runes continuously appeared under his feet. As they overlapped with each other, divine abilities were ceaselessly cast from them into the area, and there were light screens protecting them, making it difficult for others to fight back.

"Damn it, it's that person again! Just where did he come from?! He looks like a fool, but I've never seen an idiot having such great skills with Runes!"

"This person's Runes... can already gain corporeal form! How are we supposed to surround and kill him?!"

After a moment, the Morning Dao Sect cultivators in the area swiftly retreated and left the place while nursing grievances in their hearts. Their departure caused the people within the Immortals' Union to laugh loudly.

"Fellow Daoist Hu, how many did you kill this time?"

"That's right. Fellow Daoist Hu, every single time you rush out, you will draw a crowd over here. I've calculated the number this time. You should've killed twelve people, right?" There were several dozens of those from the Immortals' Union around the tiger person, and they were all smiling as they looked towards him.

There was a smug look on the man in tiger skin. He brought out a pot of wine from his bosom, and once he took a big swig from it, he let out a loud roar.

"I've killed fourteen!" He lifted the pot of wine and drank from it again. He was about to speak smugly when he lowered the pot and a shudder wrecked his body. He looked swiftly at a figure in the distance.

It was a person dressed in long black robes. He had his back turned towards the tiger person, and he had long hair. In his hands he held a long spear. He was a cultivator, and while he was not tall, he stood with his back straight. The tiger person took a swift step forward and seized the cultivator's shoulder. When the cultivator turned his head around, a fearful face was revealed before the man's eyes.

"Grandpa... Grandpa Hu, what is it?"

"Get lost! Don't you dare wear black in front of me ever again! And don't grow your hair so long! Don't use spears either!" As the man roared, he pushed the cultivator away, then picked up the pot of wine to drink from it again. However, no one saw that when he lifted his head, wine was not the only thing that flowed into his mouth. Tears flowed in as well.

"Youngest junior brother... are you well in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence? I miss you..."

Chapter 945 Heaven Traverser

He had time in his grasp, he imprisoned old age, keeping with him a period of time and a collection of beautiful memories...

In the fifth year since Su Ming had left Ninth Tribe...

A buzzing echoed in the galaxy as a colony of two-headed scorpions swarmed forward. They chased after two incredibly disheveled and pathetic-looking figures before them.

They were a man and a woman, Su Ming and Xu Hui.

"I told you a long time ago that we shouldn't take this path!"

"You only said it after we took this path."

"I did not!"

As the two fled, Xu Hui's grumbles rang in space. As their voices slowly faded into the distance, their figures also gradually vanished from sight as the colony of scorpions screeched.

In the seventh year...

Our figures were imprinted into the soul of the galaxy so that it would remember us—these words were turned into ripples of that beautiful period of time due to a man and woman named Su Ming and Xu Hui.

Enraged roars shook the galaxy. Three gigantic ferocious beasts that were originally hidden in the void roared and swam about two people. The woman's face was pale, and she held the man's hand in a tight grip.

"This is the path we chose after I listened to your suggestion."

"I was talking about another path!"

"You did not..."

Su Ming shook his head. When he closed his eyes, Ecang's projection manifested, and at the instant the three creatures in the void were shocked, he held Xu Hui's hand and left hastily into the distance.

In the tenth year...

Xu Hui appeared in the vast galaxy as if she had come out of thin air. There was anxiety on her face, and once she appeared, she immediately lowered her head. The worry in her eyes was incredibly clear.

Time trickled by with each breath she took. As Xu Hui's expression continued changing, she gritted her teeth. Just when she was about to step into the vortex, a hand suddenly stretched out of space. Xu Hui quickly grabbed it and yanked it outwards.

She immediately dragged Su Ming out of the vortex. He was an incredibly pathetic sight, but he had a handful of black fur in his left hand. That fur was burning fiercely, but Su Ming did not throw away that fur.

"That is a ferocious beast with power equivalent to a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death, you... you..." Xu Hui immediately said in anger.

"So what if it's a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death?" Su Ming smiled, though this ended up in causing the injuries in his body to get worse. However, when he saw the black fur in his left hand, he still started laughing loudly.

"I can't use the vortex to Relocate anymore... but when I choose to use it again, then... I will subdue you!" Su Ming looked at the space under his feet. There was a vortex there, and enraged roars were coming from the distance.

In the thirteenth year...

In the galaxy, there was a ferocious beast of around forty thousand feet. That creature looked like a crocodile, but if anyone looked closely at it, they would find that it was a creature that could blend into space.

Yet at that moment, there was... a tent at the top of this ferocious beast's head.

Light spread out from within that tent. There was a pearl in there, and it was the one exuding the light. Underneath it sat Su Ming, who was meditating, and Xu Hui did the same thing by the side.

Clearly, during the past three years, they had somehow managed to subdue this creature and had had a lot less setbacks in their trip. However, based on how wretched the Void Beast currently looked, it was clear that it had suffered quite terribly during the year it was subdued.

Whines echoed in the quiet galaxy. Those sounds came from the Void Beast, and they were growing increasingly urgent. In the end, they were practically piercing to the ears.

"It's feeding time. Su Ming, go and feed it." Xu Hui opened her eyes.

"It's always me. You do it this time."

"That's my pet, I subdued it!" Xu Hui declared smugly.

Su Ming fell silent. After some time, he shook his head, got up, and walked out of the tent.

After a moment, the whines disappeared. When Su Ming returned to the tent, he saw the grinning Xu Hui and let out a fake cough.

"It's strange..." He only said these two words before he shook his head and stopped speaking.

"What's strange?" Xu Hui asked, puzzled.

"It's nothing." Su Ming closed his eyes.

Xu Hui blinked and asked again, "What's strange?"

"Do you really want to know?" Su Ming's eyes remained closed when he said this.

"Tell me, quickly."

"I find it strange that so many moles has grown on this Void Beast over the past few years," he stated expressionlessly. Once he finished speaking, he immersed his heart and soul in meditation, not bothering to look at Xu Hui's expression.

The seventeenth year...

At the perimeter of the inner parts of Divine Essence Star Ocean was a gigantic ring, and it could be seen clearly from the distance. That ring was formed by endless sparkling but shattered stars. They were grouped together and formed a circle, causing this place to look like a stellar stream.

There was a faint layer of fog in it, along with countless planets, so all those who saw this sight at first glance would be attracted, but once they looked at it for a prolonged period of time, they would slowly notice that in this region of this ring-shaped stellar stream, there were shapes in the fog, and they formed the contours of ferocious beasts. All who saw that would be shocked.

"We've finally reached the inner part of Divine Essence Star Ocean." Su Ming stood on the Void Beast and looked into the distance. By his side, Xu Hui had a solemn look on her face.

She remained silent for a moment before saying softly, "Heaven Traversers, Virtue Rooters, Reng Wu Race, and Dust Burners are the four venerated races in the inner parts of Divine Essence Star Ocean, and they have already lasted for an unknown number of years... With our power, it'll be very difficult... Or perhaps it should be said that it'll be impossible for us to even shake the foundations of these races."

"We'll have to try before we know." Su Ming smiled faintly. When he lifted his right hand, he patted his storage bag, and a jade slip immediately appeared in his hand. Once he cast it a few scrutinizing glances, he passed it to Xu Hui.

"Based on the plan I told you earlier, wait for me in the spot I marked on the map, then activate the Rune one month later!" Su Ming turned his head sideways to look at Xu Hui.

She hesitated for a moment before she raised her head to look at him. "I want to go with you."

"If you come, then who will activate the Relocation Rune?" Su Ming shook his head.

"Then tell me your full plan. Why do you need to activate a Relocation Rune a month later in a designated spot?" Xu Hui stared at Su Ming.

"I want to give the Heaven Traversers, who are the closest to us, a huge gift. The plan is set," Su Ming said calmly. With one move, he turned into a long arc that charged into the distance. In the blink of an eye, he was already far away, leaving behind the Void Beast and Xu Hui staring after him as he traveled into the distance.

Xu Hui remained silent for a moment, fusing into the void with the Void Beast only much later. They disappeared without a trace and headed to the spot marked on the map based on Su Ming's request.

Su Ming rushed through the inner parts of Divine Essence Star Ocean. As he charged forward, he had his Atman sweep through the entire area. Everything around him was incredibly unfamiliar. In fact, when Su Ming swept his Atman outwards, he could sense that there were plenty of ferocious beasts in the place, but most of them were in deep sleep. They seldom ventured out, which was why when he cast his gaze on the area, it was quiet.

"Heaven Traversers..." A glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes, and the descriptions of Heaven Traversers in Dijiu Mo Sha's jade slip appeared in his head.

This was a race that worshiped the heaven. It was made up of one hundred thousand something people which lived a primitive life and regarded the sky as their paragon. The divine abilities and Arts they practiced were completely different from those of other cultivators. They were somewhat similar to those of Berserkers and Shamans, but they had their own cultivation system.

However, no matter how many branches of cultivation systems there were, they would eventually converge into one. Despite them being different at the start, once a person reached a certain level of cultivation, they would end up walking the same road. This race also had cultivators in Lunar Kalpa Realm, Solar Kalpa Realm, and also... a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death.

'They believe in the will of heaven, and worship the sky, believing it to be their God. As long as the sky is around, they will not die and can then change the galaxy...' Su Ming's eyes sparkled, and he became even faster.

'They are dressed in long blue robes, since blue is the symbol of the sky to them and so they love this color. Since they have plenty of people and the environment here is different from the world outside, the Heaven Traversers... have wings!' The fierce cold look in Su Ming's eyes grew stronger.

With wings, Heaven Traversers were the lords of the sky!

'The records in Dijiu Mo Sha's jade slip are one thousand years old. After so much time had went by. I wonder how greatly Heaven Traversers have grown. One thousand years might not be that long, not enough for anything abnormal to happen to a race...

'But I'll still have to learn about them through trial and error to perfect my plan.' Su Ming smiled coldly. With one move, his speed increased exponentially, and after shifting once, he had already traveled an incredible distance.

Several days later, he entered the inner part of Divine Essence Star Ocean and into the territory belonging to the Heaven Traversers as indicated on the map.

Based on Dijiu Mo Sha's understanding, Heaven Traversers controlled 173 cultivation planets and nearly 5,200 floating continents in the northeast portion of Divine Essence Star Ocean. Even if the territory that belonged to them could even be considered one-ten-thousandth of Divine Essence Star Ocean, this territory was already enough for the Heaven Traversers to be known as one of the four venerated races.

After all, they were one of the four large tribes who dared to live in the inner parts of Divine Essence Star Ocean, and this was something known to the world outside, because there were plenty of ferocious beasts in this area. Compared to the tribes, the numbers and strength of the ferocious beasts exceeded the tribes by far too much.

The most dangerous beings in this area were not the tribes... but the ferocious beasts!

'The four venerated races are spread around the inner parts of Divine Essence Star Ocean. They are very close to each other. Heaven Traversers and Virtue Rooters are located in the northwest and southeast regions of the inner parts.

'Dust Burners are closer to the center. As for the most mysterious Reng Wu Race, all of them live at the center, and they exist together with the powerful ferocious beasts.

'The four venerated races have a way to communicate with each other so that they would have a sense of propriety. Since that's the case, Heaven Traversers are my first target.

'You chased down my Master in the past. Now... I, Su, have come forth to make you pay.'

Killing intent shone in Su Ming's eyes. With one move, he charged towards a black cultivation planet located ahead.

This planet was known as Outer Skies Planet, and it was located at the outermost layer of Heaven Traversers' territory.

Bang!

Su Ming moved like a shooting star and charged towards the planet. Before he even closed in, he already stirred up huge waves that surged into the heavens, forming layers of ripples that spread through the galaxy. They shook the area and caused loud booms.

These violent sounds turned into waves of impact that instantly charged towards the planet, causing the weather on the planet to change. Violent gusts blew, and as the ground trembled, the seas tumbled, and trees were torn apart.

1. Reng Wu Race: Reng (𩇛) means many and Wu (邬) is a family name.

Chapter 946 Stepping into Outer Skies

A layer of green filled Outer Skies Planet. Anyone who cast their gazes towards it would find that forests covered the land, and there was no end to them. There were plenty of big trees of thousands of feet tall standing tall in the area.

From the distance, the gigantic tree crowns looked like giants standing on the ground.

There were also trees that were ten thousand feet tall. If anyone saw them, a feeling that they were ancient would rise spontaneously in their minds.

Farther down was a huge, azure ocean. As waves tumbled about there, it looked as if there were endless huge trees swaying about at the bottom of the ocean.

This was a cultivation planet filled with spiritual aura. The Essence of the World was so thick that it caused all lives in the planet to naturally possess faint power since the moment they were born.

There were no cities here, and no tribes could be detected in the planet either. It was as if this was a peaceful planet that posed no threat, but if anyone took a closer look, they would find wooden houses under the tree crowns of the gigantic trees!

Some figures with wings would occasionally move between the wooden houses.

However, all of this peace and quiet was swiftly torn apart by thunderous rumbles from the sky. Booming sounds surged everywhere. The ground trembled, the trees swayed violently, and quite a number of them were torn apart. The ocean in the distance roared, and waves rose up with loud booms.

The figures with wings in the wooden houses immediately raised their heads. Their eyes had a faint yellow hue, but at the instant they looked towards the sky, they turned crimson.

A ruthless presence erupted from all the people with wings.

Roars then echoed in the air. Their voices fused together to turn into a sharp sound that charged at the sky as if it wanted to fight against the sound coming from above.

Booms shook the sky and earth, and during that moment, a shooting star appeared in the sky. That star turned into a long arc, as if it wanted to tear through everything in its path. It charged forward, heading straight for the ground.

The long arc's appearance had caused the eyes of the Heaven Traversers under the tree crowns to turn crimson. At the same time, they flew up swiftly. As they flapped their wings, they charged towards the spot where the shooting star was about to land.

As the garrisons placed in the planet at the outermost layer of the territory that belonged to Heaven Traversers, they were used to fighting and had a brutality that was usually hidden within their bones. On normal occasions, they would sometimes venture out to hunt in the galaxy.

If there was really a ferocious beast foolish enough to intrude into their planet, then the only outcome for it would be that it would end up becoming food in their stomachs.

In fact, there were occasionally members of tribes from the galaxy beyond or cultivators not from Divine Essence Star Ocean intruding on their planet, but these people were also torn apart and eaten alive.

Almost every single one of the soldiers stationed here had done this sort of thing before, and they were incredibly fond of the supple taste of flesh and blood of cultivators.

Hundreds of Heaven Traversers traveled at extreme speeds. As they charged forward, two old men flew out from the gigantic tree reaching up to ten thousand feet. These two were dressed in long blue robes. They had old appearances, and the presences of those in the later stage of World Plane Realm spread out from them.

"Those who trespass into Heaven Traversers' territory must die!"

One of the old men let out a harrumph. He raised his right hand and swung his arm forward. The forest before him immediately started rustling and formed a gigantic palm made of tree leaves in midair. As it rushed forward, it charged towards the place where the shooting star was.

Bang!

Loud bangs shook the land as the shooting star landed on the ground. With a loud noise, a wave of impact swept through the area, lifting the earth and uprooting many trees, while roars from the quaking ground spread far and wide. Then, from the pit that appeared on the ground, Su Ming slowly stood up.

Dressed in a sackcloth and with his hair dancing in the wind, he seemed cold and aloof. There was a piercing cold glare in his eyes. At the instant he stood up, swishing sounds came from the sky, and hundreds of Heaven Traversers came swiftly towards him.

Once they saw Su Ming, their eyes immediately sparkled. To them, Su Ming was like a lost lamb, and the tenderness of his flesh was definitely one that would make them think back on it fondly after all of them had taken a bite out of him.

Almost in an instant, all Heaven Traversers opened their mouths to reveal sharp, brownish yellow teeth. From a certain perspective, they, who lived in the inner parts of Divine Essence Star Ocean, had already assimilated with ferocious beasts, and could no longer be known as humans.

After all, the wings behind their backs alone already made it difficult for the cultivators beyond Divine Essence Star Ocean to acknowledge these Heaven Traversers as humans.

Almost at the instant they rushed towards Su Ming, the huge hand formed by countless tree leaves arrived. It surpassed the member of the tribe and appeared beside Su Ming, then went to seize him with a vicious grip.

Su Ming raised his head, remaining as composed as ever. When the huge palm made of tree leaves charged towards him, he lifted his right hand, and without even using his cultivation base but just his physical strength, he hurled a punch forward.

Bang!

A loud bang reverberated in the air, and Su Ming took a step backwards. His robes fluttered fiercely in the wind, and the hand broke apart and turned into countless tree leaves that shattered before disappearing.

This scene caused Heaven Traversers to come to an abrupt halt. With a flap of their wings, they flew up together, and with hostile expressions glared at Su Ming.

At the same time, the two old men approached the area as well. At the moment they saw Su Ming, their pupils shrank together.

'Later stage of World Plane Realm...' The old men exchanged glances with each other.

"Which tribe do you come from? Why did you come to Heaven Traversers' territory?" one of the old men asked coldly. His words rolled off his mouth, and he spoke in a language that most cultivators would not be able to understand. Their language was similar to the one used by Berserkers and Shamans, but there were differences as well. Su Ming had fumbled around with the language with Dijiu Mo Sha for some time before he mastered it.

After all, he had the foundation of the Berserkers' language, and he was not unfamiliar with these sorts of tribal societies.

Su Ming did not speak. He flicked off the dust on his body, and a faint smile appeared on the corners of his lips before he took a step forward. His body became obscure, then disappeared altogether. When he reappeared, he was already in midair, and he was right behind one of the Heaven Traversers.

"Careful!"

Almost at the moment his people warned him, the young Heaven Traverser curled his body, but he did not rush forward to escape. Instead, he sent his body hurling backwards, and his wings became as sharp as blades that sliced swiftly towards the area behind him.

This was the difference between Heaven Traversers and the other races. This was a race that was skilled in fighting. Even a normal member of their race possessed incredibly great battle experience. However... while this method would be effective when there was not a great disparity between their levels of cultivation, to Su Ming, no matter how quick this person's reaction was... his actions were useless.

A rain of blood poured down from the sky, along with shrill screams of pain. Su Ming had simply allowed the young man to crash into his body and his wings slice through his skin while Su Ming himself seized the young man's neck with his right hand. With a squeeze, there was a loud crack. When he crushed the youth's neck, Su Ming sent his power straight into the person's body and crushed his Nascent Divinity.

When he released his grip, enraged roars came from all around. The hundreds of Heaven Traversers instantly rushed towards him.

"You're asking for death!"

The eyes of the two old Heaven Traversers in the later stage of World Plane Realm shone with killing intent, and these two people were the fastest among the group. One of them appeared beside Su Ming right away. As he raised his right hand, it immediately turned into a piece of dry wood. Branches grew from it, and as they spread out, it looked as if the old man's arm had turned into a tree which was rushing towards its target.

Su Ming's expression remained calm. During that instant, his cultivation base clone and his clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole fused together, and he was filled with the offensive power of those who had attained great completion in World Plane Realm. When he turned around, he raised his right hand and formed a seal before pointing at the old man's incoming tree arm.

With it, a shudder wrecked the old man's body.

"I Curse... that three out of ten Heaven Traversers will die!" Su Ming declared flatly. This was the Curse he had mastered when he was in the land of Berserkers. This Art was extremely vicious, so Su Ming seldom used it. Now, since his level of cultivation had increased, the Curse's might when he cast it became much stronger than it had been previously.

Almost the moment Su Ming finished speaking, his finger turned pitch black. Black smoke instantly flew out, and with a rotten and decaying stench, it collided with the old

man's tree arm. The black hue swiftly spread out, and as the old man's expression changed drastically, the color spread through half of his body.

Su Ming did not bother about the old man any more. With a single move, he charged towards the incoming Heaven Traversers.

For a short period of time, slaughter and bloodshed filled the sky. Shrill screams of pain continuously rang out while Su Ming was so aloof that it seemed that he had no emotions. He truly didn't feel anything by oppressing the weak because the difference between his and Heaven Traversers' level of cultivation were simply too great.

In fact, as long as they were among these hundreds of people, even the female Heaven Traversers were treated in the same fashion as the men and were killed by Su Ming.

In the blink of an eye, dozens of Heaven Traversers died in Su Ming's hands. The expressions of the people in the area changed and they retreated at the same time. Only the other old man who had attained great completion in World Plane Realm let out an enraged roar and charged towards Su Ming.

He took one step in the air, causing it to tremble and roar. When he took his second step, his feet turned into trees, and when he took his third step, he raised his right hand to seize the air in the direction of the sky. A greenish black whip manifested in his hand. With a flick of his wrist, cracking sounds shook the sky and earth.

With his fourth step, his body turned into a long arc that pressed in on Su Ming. During that moment, the power of those who had attained great completion in World Plane Realm erupted from his body. At the same time that presence spread out, the entire cultivation planet looked like it was showering its love towards him. All the trees swayed in his direction, and the ocean in the distance roared. As waves surged into the sky, they looked as if they were sending their power to the old man.

Su Ming felt as if this incoming old man could influence the entire cultivation planet, as if the flow of his blood were the surging waves in the ocean, the fall of his footsteps held the vitality of the trees on the ground, and the beating of his heart were part of the operations of this cultivation planet.

"Interesting..." Su Ming smiled faintly. At the instant the old man closed in on him and the whip came cracking down, Divine Essence Runic Symbols appeared in Su Ming's eyes.

Right when his Divine Essence appeared, Su Ming's power erupted with a bang, and he raised straight from having attained great completion in World Plane Realm to Lunar Kalpa Realm. Even if the shadow of the moon did not appear behind him, his current offensive power was that of Lunar Kalpa Realm!

In the face of the old man charging towards him, Su Ming lowered his head, raised his right hand, and just hurled a punch forward!

His fist landed in the air. The bang that came with it shook the skies, and the air in front of Su Ming immediately shattered. It tumbled backwards and turned into a whirlwind. Within an instant, it crashed into the old man who seemed to have the love of the planet gathered on him, surrounding him.

The ground trembled, and the trees stopped moving together. The ocean's howls seemed to have become silent as well. Every single Heaven Traverser in the area watched the blood flying out from the whirlwind with a dumbfounded gaze, and in their ears, they heard shrill, forlorn screams that rang continuously in the air.

Not too far into the distance was the Cursed old man whose body was now entirely black, rotting away. There was anger on his face, and he demanded with a roar, "Who are you?!"

Su Ming pulled back his right hand, lifted his head, and said flatly, "Tian Xie Zi's fourth disciple, Su Ming. I came to Heaven Traversers to take thirty thousand of your souls to make you pay for chasing after my Master's life in the past!"

Chapter 947 Curse the Plane

"Run! All Heaven Traversers, run to the tree crowns! This person isn't someone you can fight!" As the rotting old man roared, he moved forward instead of retreating and charged towards Su Ming.

The Heaven Traversers in the area were already shocked by the fact that Su Ming had managed to kill the other old man. Without any hesitation, they withdrew by turning into long arcs that charged towards the forest on the ground.

Su Ming looked coldly towards them. Once he averted his gaze, he looked at the old man coming towards him while roaring. Unstable ripples were spreading out of his body. His eyes were crimson, and a rotten stench came from his entire body. Judging by the crazed look on his face, it was clear that he wanted to self-destruct to hold his opponent back.

Su Ming raised his right hand, and a gourd appeared in his hand. A five-colored light flowed out of the gourd, and Su Ming swept his left hand across the gourd.

"Treasured gourd, please kill them!" Once he said these words, an eye instantly appeared on the gourd. It blinked once, and right after that, a small person with a sharp blade flew out. It turned into a stream of flowing light that instantly went after the fleeing Heaven Traversers.

At the same time, the old man closed in on Su Ming. His body swelled up in a bizarre manner, and a loud bang shot out from his body, a clear indication that he had chosen to self-destruct. As his body exploded, the energy from it instantly spread through the area.

The ground trembled, and the sky roared. This was a self-destruction triggered by someone who had attained great completion of World Plane Realm. If the power of the explosion spread out, it could destroy the planet, but the old man executed some unknown method and restrained the power in a set area. Because of that, once this area was destroyed, it would turn into an eternal black hole.

The black hole would deliver a huge amount of damage to the planet, but since the explosion had been limited, the planet would not shatter.

The sky and earth lost their color while the wind and clouds surged about. Just as the destructive power from the explosion was about to submerge Su Ming, the old man's head disappeared. Before he died, a ferocious sneer appeared on his mouth.

Quite a large number of fleeing Heaven Traversers raised their heads while on the ground. When they looked towards the explosion in the sky, hatred appeared in their eyes.

Su Ming remained as calm as ever. He was not afraid of his enemy's self-destruction. Almost the moment the destructive power of the explosion spread towards him, he raised his right hand and drew a circle in front of him.

"That which exists between the past and the future is Destiny," he stated flatly. He swung his right arm forward, and the Art possessed by all Abyss Builders was immediately executed. As Su Ming's level of cultivation increased, he could use his race's inborn ability with more and more ease.

What he wanted to change was not the already dead old man, but the area around him. As the world continued being destroyed by the destructive force, Su Ming's inborn ability reversed the flow, causing the destruction to go in reverse. After a moment, when the ripples of destruction dissipated, what appeared before the Heaven Traversers' eyes was Su Ming standing in the sky completely uninjured while staring at them with aloof eyes.

Almost the instant they saw him, screams of pain echoed in the air, and all of them were due to the small human from the gourd slaughtering its targets. It moved so quickly that in an instant, it had already beheaded three people.

Screams of pain traveled outwards, and Heaven Traversers fled even faster. The shock they felt in their hearts and souls could no longer be described with words. To them, the strength of the intruder this time already surpassed their expectations.

Blood rain poured down from the sky as Su Ming stood and watched the heads of Heaven Traversers flying into the air with an aloof expression. There was not a single hint of compassion in him. He came to this place to kill. Even if they were weaklings and their power was not great enough for them to stand against him... the only thing they could blame was themselves for being born Heaven Traversers.

If they wanted to blame someone, they could only blame the powerful warriors of their tribe, because they should not have chased down Su Ming's Master!

"I will not attack unless I am attacked... You have not attacked me in the past, but if I learned that someone among you chased after my Master in the past and did nothing about it, then it would be presumptuous of me to still call myself his disciple.

"Heaven Traversers, I will make you pay."

As Su Ming mumbled that, the slaughter on the ground reached its end. There were only four of Heaven Traversers who could be considered the fastest left alive. As shrill screams of pain echoed in the air, these four Heaven Traversers fled into the forest. A glint appeared in the small human's eyes. He raised his head to glance towards Su Ming, then rushed towards him and disappeared into the gourd.

"Not enough... essence... Replenish it... and you can activate the second-tier Divine Art." Once the small human flew into the gourd, the buzzing voice belonging to the gourd echoed in Su Ming's heart.

Su Ming put away the gourd and walked down towards the ground, where the forest was. If he wanted all Heaven Traversers in this planet die, then the four people who fled could not escape death.

However, at the instant Su Ming was about to descend into the forest, he suddenly frowned. An incredibly dense wave of life force erupted from the ground, the ocean in the distance, and the endless forest.

That life force was so thick that it practically had corporeal form. It created a layer of fog that covered the forest. That fog did not spread outwards but surrounded the area to form a sort of defense which was so strong that Su Ming could tell that only those possessing the power of Solar Kalpa Realm could break it.

'As expected of the four venerated races, the protection of the planet alone is already incredibly powerful. Looks like Heaven Traversers were careless just now; otherwise, if they had just hidden themselves here, it would have been enough to cause me quite a large amount of trouble.' Su Ming swept his gaze across the fog in the forest.

'The entire cultivation planet is rejecting my presence. Heaven Traversers have been acknowledged by the planet, so me wanting to kill them would mean that I am going up against the cultivation planet itself.

'It was the same with the old man's divine ability just then. What he executed was the power of kismet gathered on him after he was acknowledged by the planet.' Su Ming remained silent for a moment before a cold smirk appeared on the corners of his lips.

He raised his right foot and stomped in the direction of the forest. His body immediately sank, and once he touched the fog, his power erupted from within him. Booming sounds reverberated in the air, and he forced his way into the fog until he eventually touched the ground in the forest.

The fog around him was so thick that he felt as if he was surrounded by seawater. When he wanted to move, his body was tangled by countless threads, making it difficult for him to even lift his foot. The grass on the ground wound itself around Su Ming's legs, and as the trees around him swayed, they blocked his sight. The sky was dark, and the ground trembled irregularly. The ocean roared and howled, and even the air he breathed in thinned out. All of this was due to the cultivation planet rejecting Su Ming.

If the cultivation planet was sentient and was a person, then its hatred towards Su Ming would have surely reached its peak.

"Since you don't like me, there is no need for you to continue existing." Su Ming could sense the planet's hatred towards him and how it rejected his presence. With a cold sneer, he slowly raised his right hand and pushed it against the ground. As he closed his eyes, wisps of red smoke appeared on his right index finger.

More red smoke appeared, and they gradually formed a ring. After a moment, a red ring manifested on Su Ming's right index finger!

The ring was blood red, and it was shining with a strange light. At the instant it appeared, the Curse's dense power erupted and surged into the ground from Su Ming's right hand before spreading out.

The ring was Su Ming's treasure, and it was the source of his Curse.

Since this planet rejected Su Ming, then Su Ming chose to Curse the planet... and have it destroyed.

If the planet was destroyed, then it would no longer possess such dense life force. If it had no life force, it would no longer be able to offer protection. In fact, Su Ming even had an idea in his mind. Since the planet had a soul, he wanted to know whether... the planet would absorb the remaining Heaven Traversers' life force to replenish its life force once it was almost completely drained.

Su Ming smiled faintly. A freezing glare shone in his eyes, and the power of the Curse spreading out from his right hand continued expanding on the ground. The earth trembled. The trees swayed so violently that it sounded like they were roaring. The ocean howled, and the thunder in the sky rumbled.

"I curse you... that your ground will be shattered!" As Su Ming spoke, the red ring on his finger began flashing as if it was a red eye. Immediately, cracks appeared on the spot against which Su Ming had pressed his palm. The cracks continued spreading outwards, and in the blink of an eye, they had already spread in all directions.

"I curse you... that your trees will wither!" Su Ming stated flatly, and the trees around him started withering rapidly. Wails shot up into the air. They were without sound, but Su Ming could detect them, and they were reverberating all through the air.

"I curse you... that your ocean will dry up and your stones will shatter!"

"I curse you... that your life force will disappear!"

Su Ming pushed his right hand even close to the ground, and immediately, the planet rumbled. An incredible rebound shot up from the earth, the sky, the forest, and the ocean. That rebound swiftly rushed towards Su Ming.

It was as if it wanted to dispel the Curse and send it back to Su Ming's body so that the Curse would turn against Su Ming and attack him.

Su Ming smiled coldly. He raised his right hand and seized the withered grass under his feet before swiftly beginning to weave the blades of grass together. In just ten breaths, a round ball of withered grass was woven, and in Su Ming's eyes, this ball was made in the cultivation planet's image.

He bit the tip of his tongue and coughed up a mouthful of blood on the ball of grass, then with the ball in his right hand, he pushed down on the ground once more.

"I curse you... that you... will be destroyed!"

Su Ming's voice was calm, but at the instant his words tumbled out of his mouth, anyone who saw this cultivation planet in the outskirts of Heaven Traversers' territory would be able to see that its green lands were swiftly turning gray right before the eyes. As that gray shade spread out, the ground rumbled, and countless cracks covered it. The trees withered and rotted together. The water from the ocean evaporated until it turned into black drops of rain that fell on the ground.

A cultivation planet that was filled with an abundance of life fell into decay in the blink of an eye, as if it had died!

"I curse you... that your sky will become dull from here onwards and forever more!" Su Ming raised his head at the withered forest.

1. Ring: Su Ming obtained it in his fight against Madam Ji. In chapter 'The Death of Madam Ji'.

Chapter 948 Four People

The withered ball of grass in Su Ming's hand had become yellow, as if it would turn into ashes the moment he poked it gently with his finger. At the instant Su Ming raised his head to speak, black clouds formed under the black rain pouring from the sky. Those clouds spread to the horizon, covering the land in darkness.

The cracks on the ground became larger. The withered trees turned into ashes. The ocean in the distance turned into a basin, and within that deep pit was limitless mud and withered plants.

An aura of death spread out from the withered trees, the basin, and the ground. Once it gathered together, it grew incredibly dense.

Su Ming looked at the area around him. As he swept his gaze across it, he found that everything had fallen into ruin. In fact, he could even see dozens of Heaven Traversers fleeing while wailing and shrieking.

Clearly, not all Heaven Traversers had taken action previously. The dozens of survivors were withering away right then, and no matter whether they were willing or unwilling, a large amount of their life force was being rapidly sucked out of their bodies by the ground, or rather, it was being absorbed by the dying cultivation planet.

If it could acknowledge these Heaven Traversers living on it, then similarly, it would take away its acknowledgement when it needed to, and even take away the life force of these living creatures.

Su Ming watched the dozens of Heaven Traversers being reduced to only skin and bones while screaming in pain after traveling less than several hundreds of feet. When all of their life force had been sucked out from them, they were reduced to dust.

However, their life force was inadequate for this gigantic cultivation planet. It could only allow this planet remain alive for several more breaths under Su Ming's Curse.

Ten breaths later, cracks no longer appeared on the ground. The trees stopped withering, and the basin in the distance fell into silence as well. Only the black rain remained as it continued pouring from the sky, and the black clouds remained to blot out all light from shining onto the land.

This was... a dead planet.

The stench of decay and the aura of death filled all corners of the planet. They were so strong that anyone who arrived to this planet for the first time would think that it had died a long time ago.

Su Ming lifted his right hand in which the ball woven from withered grass had turned into powder. Once it was drenched by black rain, the powder seeped through the cracks between his fingers and fell on the ground.

"They should be here now." Su Ming sat down cross-legged and swung his right hand in the air. Once he flung off the wet powder from his hand, he pushed his palm lightly against the ground.

He lifted his palm, then pushed it down once more. With the same rhythm, he performed this action again and again.

When Su Ming pressed his palm against the ground nine times, the cracks in the earth started closing up before his eyes. After a moment, not a single crack could be found anymore.

When Su Ming pressed his palm against the ground eighteen times, the withered trees suddenly became illusions. Once they faded away, trees overflowing with life appeared. After a short while, the cultivation planet was green once more. It made it seem as if the trees in the planet had never withered. There was no end to the forest here, and all of the trees possessed endless life force.

When Su Ming's hand pressed against the ground twenty-seven times, a hazy fog covered the basin in the distance, and soon after, seawater started surging in. Within an instant, the basin that had previously lost its water became a vast ocean once again.

The dark clouds in the sky started swiftly changing as Su Ming struck the ground. When he pressed his palm against the ground thirty-six times, the black clouds disappeared, and a clear, blue sky as well as a brilliant sun reappeared before his eyes and above the ground.

The black rain became clear as well as it fell on the ground, creating a curtain that made the cultivation planet look as beautiful as it had been in the beginning.

"They're here... it's a pity none of them is Heaven Traversers' Progenitor."

Su Ming's right hand paused for a moment on the ground. As he lifted his head and spoke faintly, loud booms came from the sky. As they echoed in the air, three long arcs approached the place. They did not come from the distance, but appeared in the planet's sky as if they had walked out of space.

These three people were two men and one woman, and all of them appeared to be in their forties. They were dressed in long, deep blue robes. As they spread their wings, flowing streams of light could be seen moving about them. Their long hair danced in the wind, and an astonishing power spread out from their bodies.

If anyone observed them closely, they would be able to see that the shadows of moons could be seen between their wings. The trio... were powerful warriors in Lunar Kalpa Realm!

One of the two men had a moon made of water, while the other's moon was made of fire. As for the woman, she had a moon made of flower petals behind her.

All of those in Lunar Kalpa Realm belonged to the central power of a race, and it was the same for Heaven Traversers as well. These three were clearly people with extremely high status in this venerated race.

At the instant they appeared in the sky, the trio immediately looked towards the ground, and they were all momentarily stunned.

"We received a call for help earlier, saying that a powerful enemy has invaded the planet, but there's only peace here now..."

"I sensed ripples of death from the planet just now, but now this place is filled with life." The trio exchanged glance. The woman's eyes shone, and she raised her right hand to sweep it across her eyes before closing them. When she opened them again, the forest still covered the ground, and nothing strange could be detected.

"It's not an illusion."

Just as the trio were hesitant and uncertain, dozens of people flew up from the ground. Those people... were Heaven Traversers.

They were traveling swiftly towards the trio, and the trio instantly looked towards them.

"What exactly happened here? Where are your Garrison Elders Ze Du and Han Duo?" the man with the water moon behind him demanded with a frown.

When he asked this question, the dozens of Heaven Traversers immediately seemed to have gained sentience.

"Was the intruder a ferocious beast or someone from another tribe?" the other man asked. As his words echoed in the air, the minds of the dozens of Heaven Traversers became even clearer, and they looked no different than before they had died.

The woman's expression changed at that moment. But just as she was about to speak, a loud bang suddenly came from the sky. Four long arcs rushed over, and the crowd immediately turned to them.

Even Su Ming looked towards them as he sat in the forest.

The four were all cultivators, and all of them were men in their thirties. They did not stand far apart from each other, so it was clear that they were in a group. Once they appeared, they immediately came to a halt and stopped in midair. With shock and bewilderment on their faces, the four of them gathered together.

"I am a cultivator from the galaxy beyond, Xuan Shang, and I am good friends with the tribe leader of Dust Burners, Lu Ka. I have come to this galaxy due to his invitation. This is our authentication token. However, we ran into some trouble on our way there and passed by this place by pure coincidence. We did not know that this is Heaven Traversers' territory, so please don't take it to mind. We will leave now, we will leave immediately."

The person who spoke was a man dressed in a long, dark green robe. There was a smile on his face, and he looked incredibly polite. As he spoke, he brought out a black wooden block from his bosom. With a swing, that wooden block floated up and was ignited in flames. The flames were green and looked like a ball of phantasmal fire, but they did not exude hot air. Instead, they let out a chilly aura.

The four cultivators all had outstanding power, and they seemed to be in the later stage of World Plane Realm. If they were outside Divine Essence Star Ocean, then any one of them would be able to become the pillar of a family, and they could even work out some conditions with the forces of power from the four Great True Worlds.

However, in the alien race filled Divine Essence Star Ocean, they were incredibly cautious with their actions. Their words were filled with courteousness because they were afraid of causing a misunderstanding.

In truth, the four of them had indeed passed by this place by pure coincidence, just as they had said. They did not come from Western Ring Nebula but from another galaxy and were prepared to head deeper into the inner parts of Divine Essence Star Ocean.

They ran into plenty of troubles on their way and had wasted almost a hundred years to reach this place. The dangers they faced time and again had reduced their initial group of seven to only four. After arriving here with much difficulty, they saw Outer Skies Planet. The green planet caused them to hesitate for a moment before deciding to come to this place to rest. However, they did not expect that they would run into an alien race there.

It was clear that the one who spoke just then understood the alien races in Divine Essence Star Ocean quite well. Because of that, once he saw the wings on the people's backs, he could immediately tell that they were Heaven Traversers of the four venerated races.

As the four retreated, they swiftly sent their thoughts to each other, prepared to immediately fight back when Heaven Traversers blocked their path. They might have sensed that the three strongest were in Lunar Kalpa Realm, but cultivators who dared to

step into Divine Essence Star Ocean would not carelessly come here without some powerful Enchanted Treasures and divine abilities. It would be impossible for them to reach the inner parts of the galaxy without them. They would die on the way there.

Su Ming swept his gaze across the four cultivators. He could see their fatigue and also tell that their words were not lies. However... without great temptation, no one would dare to step into the inner parts of Divine Essence Star Ocean. These four people... must certainly be harboring some secrets.

The two men out of the three people in Lunar Kalpa Realm in the sky frowned, but when they heard the name of Dust Burners' tribe leader, they paused for a moment. When they saw the authentication token the man brought out, they averted their gazes and ignored the four cultivators.

The four immediately retreated, intending to distance themselves from trouble. They could vaguely tell that there was a hostile expression on these Heaven Traversers' faces, as if something had happened among them. No matter what it was, the four did not want to participate in it.

Yet right at the instant they were about to leave, the expression of the woman in Lunar Kalpa Realm changed several times before she went charging after them. She also started speaking hurriedly.

"There's something off about the four! We can't let them leave!"

The woman flew really fast, and the expressions of the four cultivators changed. They began fleeing at full speed. The other two Heaven Traversers in Lunar Kalpa Realm frowned, clearly puzzled by their companion's actions, but they still chased after the group instinctively.

Su Ming sighed in the forest on the ground.

'There are still some flaws within the Illusion of Stars, Sun, and Moon which now contains the power that will exist when I believe in it. If the appearance of these four people did not serve as a comparison between illusion and reality, then this flaw would not have been so clear.'

Su Ming shook his head. He knew that the woman had discovered that there was something off, but she did not dare to voice it out loud due to her surprise and bewilderment, which was why she had chased after the cultivators in an attempt to mask her desire to leave this dead cultivation planet.

"Since you're already here, then don't leave," Su Ming said faintly and stood up. At the instant he did so, the cultivation planet turned into a withered and dead planet from its previous state of overflowing with life force!

As the ground withered and died, the pupils of the three Heaven Traversers in Lunar Kalpa Realm shrank, and their bodies froze for a moment in midair.

This pause was clearly not of their free will, but because their feet had started withering at that instant!

It was as if their feet had started withering with the planet's ground.

At the instant their expressions drastically changed, all the trees in the cultivation planet withered before shattering and returning to their previous dead state. Soon after, a large portion of the Heaven Traversers' skin began sinking. Then, in the blink of an eye, their hair fell off. As their bodies withered, they were reduced to merely skin and bones.

Disbelief appeared in their eyes, and they began fleeing rapidly without hesitation, but...

The ocean rumbled in the distance, and the moment a foggy layer appeared above the water, the seemingly vast ocean turned into a deep basin in the span of a breath. The decaying mud in the basin exuded a foul stench. Then, as if affected by the basin, a large amount of black patches appeared on the three Heaven Traversers. Black blood oozed out of those patches, and it was a terrifying sight to behold.

"What is this divine ability?!"

"Everything we saw was fake, and everything we now see is also fake! Don't look at the ground of the planet! We must leave this place! Once we reach the galaxy, this Art will naturally lose its effect!"

It was clear that this was the first time the trio had encountered such a bizarre divine ability. At that moment, they flapped their wings and had their power burst forth from their bodies to turn into three long arcs and charge into the sky.

The four cultivators in the distance were stunned by this scene. Their expressions changed swiftly, and as they retreated, they began flying into the sky.

Yet at that moment, Su Ming stood up from the withered ground, and his aloof voice tumbled out of his lips.

"I curse the sky that its color will be black from now onwards..."

When his words were spoken, the world roared, and the sky which originally appeared clear and bright was instantly torn apart. This was a veil that hid the truth, and now, once it was lifted, an expanse of sky filled with tumbling black clouds was revealed.

"I curse the falling rain that it would become dust that will cause the ground to decay."

When Su Ming spoke once again, black rain poured down from the sky. The raindrops brought with them incredible corrosive properties. If they touched a person's body, they would feel as if their bodies were being corroded.

The path of the three powerful Heaven Traversers in Lunar Kalpa Realm was blocked by the black clouds. The feathers on their wings also fell off at that instant the weather changed. Black smoke surrounded them, as if it wanted to corrode them.

The three people's faces were incredibly dark. They looked down and saw everything on the planet as well as the skeletons on the ground, along with... the dozens of dried up corpses that belonged to Heaven Traversers smiling at them.

These corpses floated in midair and were staring at them before pouncing on them as if they had been resurrected.

"Who are you?!" the woman shouted out in a sharp voice as she glared at Su Ming, who was on the ground staring at them with his head raised.

His long hair danced in the air, and purple light shone faintly in his eyes. His expression was calm, but the purple line at the center of his brows made it difficult for him to hide the strange and malicious air spreading out from him.

"You are the one who saw through my illusion." Su Ming smiled faintly, but it brought a chill to the spines of all who saw it, especially the four cultivators. Their expressions were solemn as they gathered together while staring at him warily.

They were groaning in their hearts. They had originally intended to rest in this place, but they had run into the Heaven Traversers. Although they gave them the slip, they then ran into an existence that seemed to be even more terrifying than Heaven Traversers.

Based on this person's clothes, he did not seem like a cultivator, but was a member of some tribe in Divine Essence Star Ocean, though they could not tell just which tribe he came from.

"He's only someone who has attained great completion in World Plane Realm. We'll attack him at full strength. Once we kill him, we'll be able to break out of this illusion."

A glint appeared in the woman's eyes. Once she said her plan, she charged down at Su Ming from the sky. The two men behind her gritted their teeth, and the full power of those in Lunar Kalpa Realm erupted from their bodies. When the illusory water moon and burning fire moon appeared clearly behind them, they took a step forward, turned into long arcs that rushed at Su Ming.

"An illusion, hmm?" Su Ming said faintly. "This was a grand feast prepared for your Progenitor, but the three of you... can join it beforehand.

"Planet who is so starved you are near death, the life force from these three should be able to let you recover by quite a large margin. Are you going to protect the Heaven Traversers you acknowledged... or absorb the life force of these life forms you acknowledged?

"This your choice."

Su Ming smiled, but it was an incredibly malicious expression. He was not someone who had been acknowledged by the planet, which was why it was difficult for the planet to form a connection with him and absorb his life force through it... but it was different for Heaven Traversers.

Once Su Ming spoke, a feeble buzz that was full of rage shot out from the ground and echoed in the world. Su Ming could hear this roar, and all the other people in the area could hear it as well.

This was the roar from the spirit of the planet as it struggled with itself.

As its roar echoed in the air and the trio closed in from the sky, Su Ming laughed. His laughter fused with the roar from the ground, exuding a domineering air and a malicious presence that surged into the skies.

Almost at the instant his laughter traveled outwards, the roars from the ground became even more intense, and the trio coming towards him from the sky spotted drastic changes in their expressions. Large parts of their bodies began withering swiftly, for their life force started being absorbed by the sky in an unseen manner at a speed that left them in disbelief.

It was as if they were rejected by the planet. However, it was not due to Su Ming's actions, but the spirit of the planet devouring them for its own survival.

It was devouring all the beings that it had acknowledged and who had acknowledged it in return.

An average cultivator would immediately have his or her body and soul destroyed if he or she was devoured in this manner, but powerful warriors in Lunar Kalpa Realm had the qualification to fight against this force devouring them, but the prerequisite to fight against it... was to cut off the connection formed between them and the planet after they had acknowledged each other.

The hundred something planets within the territory of the Heaven Traversers had always had a strange connection with the tribe's people since ancient times. This connection was formed based on an agreement accepted by both parties. The planets

would provide whatever Heaven Traversers needed to practice cultivation, while Heaven Traversers would provide protection and time for growth for the spirits of the planets.

Yet this connection that had existed for a long period of time was completely broken off by the three Heaven Traversers as they roared in anger.

As powerful warriors in Lunar Kalpa Realm, when the three of them worked together, they possessed the right to revoke the agreement they had formed with a planet.

While withering, the three powerful Heaven Traversers in Lunar Kalpa Realm revealed conflicted looks on their faces before pressing their right hands against the center of their brows and their left hands against their chests. Once they did so, they gritted their teeth and spoke.

"I, son of La Song Ya, Song Yan, represent the descendants of La Song Ya in revoking the agreement between us and Outer Skies Planet!"

"I, son of Dong Nuo, Dong Tao, represent the descendants of Dong Nuo in revoking the agreement between us and Outer Skies Planet!"

"I, daughter of Yan Di Fei, Ruo Ke, represent the descendants of Dong Nuo in revoking the agreement between us and Outer Skies Planet!"

At the instant they said these words, the roar from the ground turned into one of sorrow. This mournful cry reverberated through the entire cultivation planet, and the suction force surrounding the trio disappeared.

Su Ming smiled and shook his head, then took a step forward. He shifted, appearing right in front of the man with the water moon. He raised his right hand, clenched his fist, and hurled a punch forward.

At the instant he did so, Divine Essence Runic Symbols appeared swiftly in his eyes. Because of that, his punch burst forth with the power of Lunar Kalpa Realm when it landed on air, despite the fact that the power contained within the fist when Su Ming had thrown it in the beginning only possessed the force those who had attained great completion in World Plane Realm.

The man with the water moon retreated swiftly. A ferocious look appeared on his face, and the water moon seeped through his body to charge towards Su Ming.

In the blink of an eye, the water moon crashed into Su Ming's fist.

Bang!

The man with the water moon coughed up blood and started falling backwards like a kite whose string had snapped in the wind. Su Ming swayed and was forced two steps back. When he raised his head, the fighting spirit in his eyes burned even greater.

"As expected of Heaven Traversers, a venerated race indeed. Even after having a considerable amount of your life force sucked out from your bodies and the Curse corroding your internal organs, you were still able to bring forth such great amount of Lunar Kalpa power."

Su Ming smiled. At the same time, the other two Heaven Traversers in Lunar Kalpa Realm closed in on him from two different directions. The fire moon and flower moon became a source of bright light in this darkened world at that instant.

The Divine Essence Runic Symbols shone in Su Ming's eyes. They rose and fell in waves on his body, causing his level of cultivation to rise once again. At the same time, another presence appeared around Su Ming's body. It was... Ecang's presence.

When that it appeared, Su Ming's offensive abilities rose once again, and he broke through Lunar Kalpa Realm. He took a step forward, and with an indescribable speed, he appeared behind the retreating man with the water moon and grabbed his wings. With one vicious yank, he ripped off the man's wings in the mid of the man's pained screams.

Blood gushed out. Su Ming raised his right hand. With a speed akin to lightning and power equivalent to those in Solar Kalpa Realm, he pointed with his index finger at the back of the head of the man with the water moon.

Bang!

The man's head exploded, but his Nascent Divinity had left his body beforehand and was fleeing swiftly. Su Ming looked over at it with an aloof gaze.

"Do the four of you want to live?"

Once Su Ming said that, the four cultivators who had been watching everything immediately turned pale. Expressions of conflict appeared on their faces, but soon, they gritted their teeth and chased after the fleeing man with the water moon. The person called Xuan Shang was the fastest. His body flashed once before he struck his forehead and spat out a pearl.

That pearl instantly rushed towards the Nascent Divinity of the man with the water moon. It closed in on him within an instant and crashed with a bang, causing that Nascent Divinity to let out a shrill cry. At the same time, the pearl exploded and turned into a huge net that enveloped the Nascent Divinity of the man with the water moon inside.

"Hua Yu!"

Xuan Shang's face was pale. Clearly, he had used up all his strength in the attack just then. At that moment, he let out a low growl, and a man in white by his side spotted a glint in his eyes before he rushed to the Nascent Divinity of the man with the water moon. Once he closed in, he raised his right hand, and a crack appeared on his palm.

"Seal his soul!"

The crack was like a gaping mouth. At the instant he pushed his palm towards that Nascent Divinity, the shrill screams from the man with the water moon fell silent, and his Nascent Divinity was devoured by the hand.

Chapter 950 Beginning of Light Summer

Su Ming did not pay any attention to the actions of the four cultivators. If they wanted to live, then they had to show their sincerity. If they did not want to offend Heaven Traversers but did not want to provoke Su Ming as well, then he alone would decide whether they would live or die.

If they wanted to complain, then the only thing they could blame was that they had terrible luck. They should not have entered this place at this moment, but since they were here, then it was no longer up to them to struggle against Su Ming's control. They had to make a choice.

The screams from the Nascent Divinity of the man with the water moon fell into Su Ming's ears. He thus knew of the four cultivators' choice, but he did not look towards them. Instead, with one move, he charged towards the two with the fire moon and flower moon.

This was a massacre where the parties involved had a great disparity in their levels of cultivation. Ecang's presence spread out from Su Ming, and Ecang's power circulated in his body, allowing him to possess the offensive power equivalent to those in Solar Kalpa Realm.

Even though he only possessed power equivalent to them and was not truly in Solar Kalpa Realm, it was enough to make him the strongest person among all those below Solar Kalpa Realm.

As he watched the male and female Heaven Traverser rushing towards him, Su Ming narrowed his eyes. He did not retreat, but charged forward, and during that moment, he raised his right hand, formed a seal, and touched the center of his brows before pointing towards the fire moon since it was closer.

"The Life Matrix of midwinter is the beginning of my life."

With it, moaning gusts of chilling wind immediately rose within the world covered in black clouds. In the mid of these cold winds, snow appeared, as if the world had been frozen, but the snow was not white—it was black!

The black snow floated in the world, turning the black rain into ice that filled the whole space. A piercing cold will froze the area, and the incoming fire moon started letting out cracking sounds when Su Ming pointed towards it before freezing mid-move.

The man with the fire moon who was glaring at Su Ming while charging towards him was also frozen.

He struggled while shouting angrily. In fact, at the instant he was frozen, he brought out a large amount of Enchanted Treasures and even executed his divine abilities to fight against the ice, but all of them were instantly frozen in midwinter.

This was the Art brought by Su Ming's Life Matrix—the power of midwinter!

"After winter, crimson will be the ruler of the world. This red symbolizes autumn... and it is the pinnacle of autumn's red!" Su Ming said flatly, then pointed towards the flower moon with his right hand.

The flower moon formed by countless petals immediately turned yellow and withered when Su Ming pointed at it. In the blink of an eye, a red hue that was similar to autumn appeared on it, causing the expression of the woman behind it to change. Her face became pale.

This was a divine ability she could not hope to fight against. It was a transformation of an Art she had never seen before. Midwinter and the crimson red of autumn should be the changes of the four seasons in the world, but when Su Ming executed them, the woman felt as if he were the four seasons in the universe.

The transformations of the four seasons were at his fingertips, but there was nothing strange about it, as if... the world had always be like this, as if the four seasons had always... always been changed at will by this man in front of her.

'I Possessed Ecang, my cultivation base clone is in the later stage of World Plane Realm, and the physical body of my clone that practices the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole has become complete. All of this... is like the light summer during the beginning of autumn. As it continues being brewed like wine and accumulates power in the process, it would erupt forth with flames rife with life, which would only appear during the scorching summer.

'This fire is still not strong right now. There is only one ball of flame, but this fire of life is the burning sun I lit up when I burned the universe as I walked out of midwinter!"

Su Ming raised his head. When he lifted it, his long hair swayed in the wind, looking like flickering flames. His body also looked as if it had been lit aflame at that instant!

These were the flames of his life. He had obtained them after he moved from winter to autumn, then from autumn to summer. When these flames burned at their brightest, Su Ming move into the summer of his life!

When that time came, what would await Su Ming would be the final step in his life - spring, where all manner of living was resurrected!

The resurrection of all lives also symbolized a rise in power, as well as... rebirth!

When that moment came, it would be the time for Su Ming's rebirth and a burst of power in upon having reached the pinnacle. This step... was no longer far away!

At the instant the light flames of summer burned on Su Ming's body, he formed a seal with his hands and flung them outwards. A sea of fire erupted from his body and tumbled outwards. In the blink an eye, it devoured the frozen fire moon, surrounded the withered, red flower moon, and enveloped the male and female Heaven Traversers.

There were no shrill screams of pain, no shocking booms, just the burning sea of fire in the black snow that filled the entire world with red. Yet the scene brought forth by winter, autumn, and summer fusing together brought an even greater impact than any loud bang or shrill scream, and it caused the breathing of the four cultivators in the distance to quicken and their hearts to tremble.

When the sea of fire disappeared, Su Ming stood in midair with a calm expression. There was no longer any fire moon or flower moon before him, and no traces of the man and woman.

These two had already been burned to ashes by Su Ming's flames of life.

The cultivation planet was filled with silence at that moment. After a long time, when Su Ming turned his gaze towards the four cultivators, they immediately bowed to him with respect on their faces.

"Tell me your names," Su Ming said flatly.

They were stunned and terrified by Su Ming's divine ability, and their will to fight ha been suppressed by Su Ming's mighty display of power. At that moment, after they lowered their heads to bow to him, they quickly told him their names.

"I am Xuan Shang. Greetings, senior."

"I am Hua Yu. Greetings, senior."

"I am Yun You. Greetings, senior."

"I am Nian Yin. Greetings, senior."

"Why did you come to Divine Essence Star Ocean?" Su Ming's tone was flat. When he swept his gaze past the four, he fixed his eyes on Xuan Shang, who had previously brought out the authentication token from Dust Burners' tribe leader.

Xuan Shang hesitated for a moment before lowering his head and saying, "We were invited by the tribe leader of Dust Burners to head to their tribe because of some personal matters..." Since the moment he saw Su Ming, he never once thought of him as a cultivator, and even now, he still believed that Su Ming was a powerful warrior from some tribe in Divine Essence Star Ocean.

Even the three people beside him believed the same. After all, Su Ming's clothes, bearing, and that indescribable presence on him was not that different from the locals they saw in Divine Essence Star Ocean.

If he was a cultivator, then he would have the same vague presence they had because they were unable to fuse with Divine Essence Star Ocean, making them seem as if they were solitary existences in this place. Even if there were some methods that would help them cover this presence, anyone who had the intention to find them would still be able to detect it. However, they found none of this presence on Su Ming.

"Oh?"

Su Ming smiled. When they saw his smile, they immediately felt their skin crawl. There was nothing eerie about that smile, but when Su Ming smiled, the purple line at the center of his brows seemed to squirm slightly, as if a tiny crack had opened up. A feeling as if they were being watched instantly rose in their hearts, and they felt as if they had been stripped naked in an instant. They could hide none of their secrets, and the small slit at the center of his brows could see all of them clearly.

In fact, they had a strong feeling that... there was an eye in the slit between Su Ming's brows!

"I was also planning to visit Dust Burners. I wonder if it would be troubling for you if I asked to join you?" There seemed to be a ghost of a smile on Su Ming's lips, but the piercing cold glare in his eyes made the hearts of all who saw it to tighten in fear.

How would they dare say that it was troublesome? Even if they were extremely unwilling, they had to smile and nod.

"Senior, it would be great if you joined us. With you around, we would be much safer. It is our honor. I, Xuan Shang, thank you for joining us, senior." Bitterness rose in Xuan

Shang's heart, but he did not dare to show even a single hint of it. Instead, he put on a delighted face and quickly wrapped his fist in his palm to thank Su Ming.

"Alright, you can leave now. Search for any random place and wait for me. Once I settle matters with Heaven Traversers, I will naturally come find you," Su Ming said flatly.

The four immediately experienced shock and bewilderment in their hearts, but did not show a single hint of their emotions on their faces. Instead, they wrapped their fists in their palms towards Su Ming, then turned into long arcs and intended to quickly leave the planet they now regretted coming entering.

But the black clouds in the sky were still around and continued to seal the place...

"You're leaving just like that?" Su Ming landed on the ground, then sat down with his legs crossed.

The four people in the sky were momentarily stunned, then Hua Yu's expression changed. When he lowered his head, he raised his right hand, and a crack appeared on his palm. The Nascent Divinity of the man with the water moon had his eyes closed and was unconscious. Once Hua Yu flung him out, he drifted towards Su Ming.

At the same time, black clouds tumbled about in the sky to open up a tunnel. They stepped into it swiftly, and with the fastest speed they could muster, they quickly left the dead planet.

"Fellow Daoist Xuan, we..."

"Don't say anything else. We have to leave in a hurry. That malicious person is far too audacious. He actually dared to kill Heaven Traversers. This should be Heaven Traversers' territory, and powerful warriors are bound to arrive soon! We must leave in haste!" Xuan Shang immediately said. He bit the tip of his tongue and coughed up a mouthful of blood to activate Fleeing Blood - an Art common among cultivators, but rarely used.

The other three did the same thing. Their blood red shadows left into the distance within an instant.

After a moment, they had fled into an area far away from the planet, but Xuan Shang did not stop moving. Only when he had flown very far into the distance did he turn his head around to look back at the now distant planet with fear lingering in his heart.

"Just what level of cultivation does he possess? He easily killed those in Lunar Kalpa Realm... so could he be a monster in Solar Kalpa Realm?"

"Fellow Daoist Yun, you might still have underestimated that person. I observed him and realized just how casually he killed those three Heaven Traversers in Lunar Kalpa

Realm. This sort of person is definitely stronger than an average cultivator in Solar Kalpa Realm!"

"He can fight against a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death!" The person who said these words so adamantly was Hua Yu, the person with the divine ability to seal another's soul. His expression was dark, and when his words left his mouth, they immediately made the other three fall silent.

"There's something really bizarre about that person. For some reason, when I see him, I feel goosebumps all over my skin. Honestly, I've seen plenty of people in my life, but none of them were like this person. That malicious aura about him is just indescribable."

"Hmm? I had that feeling too. It's as if there's an evil about him that can suffocate others!"

"Looks like everyone had the same feeling. I felt the same thing as well... and since he actually dared to stay in that cultivation planet, it means that he is definitely in possession of power that allows him to not be afraid of Heaven Traversers' Master of Fate, Lives, and Death."

"He asked to go with us to Dust Burners. Should we wait?"

The four fell silent again, and the three looked towards Xuan Shang, which was a telling sign that he was the leader in the group.

Xuan Shang's expression changed. After a moment, he gritted his teeth. Just as he was about to speak, a loud bang came from the distant galaxy, and it was so loud that even they could hear it. In this galaxy, such a bang could only mean one thing...

A planet had collapsed!

The group's expressions changed drastically, and they immediately fixed their stares towards the source of that bang. Then, they saw the impact formed by a planet self-destructing and the brilliant light that was difficult to put into words in the distance.

Chapter 951 Arrival

Ten breaths before the explosion, Su Ming sat cross-legged on the withered Outer Skies Planet. He was waiting for the powerful warrior who would definitely come to him. This was one of the reasons why he came to Heaven Traversers.

He wanted... to fight against a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death!

He would fight against him with his full strength, and he would definitely lose... But even if he was definitely going to lose, Su Ming still wanted to fight. He wanted to see the difference between him and a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death. He also... wanted to figure out the strength of Heaven Traversers!

He wanted to know how many Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death they had. If there was still only one, then Su Ming would execute his plan. If there was more than one, he would need to change his plan.

Time passed breath by breath. When the sixth breath arrived, Su Ming lifted his head. Divine Essence Runic Symbols sparkled in his eyes before they filled his whole body within an instant. At the same time, his lips curled up into a cold sneer. He raised his arms and pushed his hands at the ground.

With it, his body swiftly shot up from the ground. Soon, the planet roared. As cracks continued spreading through the ground, a destructive power erupted from the planet.

At that moment, a cold harrumph came from thin air. As it echoed, the black clouds in the sky started tumbling about and turned into a vortex. Su Ming then saw... an endless amount of earth in the sky, the sort of earth formed after someone was buried under it!

Perhaps it was better to say that this was not earth, but a boundless palm. This was... Heaven Traversers' Master of Fate, Lives, and Death coming over.

"You're finally here!"

Su Ming threw his head back and laughed. When he jumped up, the destructive power of the planet beneath him became stronger. At that moment, if anyone watched from the galaxy, they would have seen that there was a group of meteors charging towards Outer Skies Planet. They were packed densely together, and it was unknown how many of them there were. They were incredibly quick, and in an instant, they approached Outer Skies Planet.

They surrounded it, and as they connected to each other, they formed a gigantic palm that was several times bigger than the planet. Once this palm was lifted, it went to seize Outer Skies Planet, and judging by its momentum, it seemed like it wanted to crush the planet.

Yet right at the moment the palm touched it, the planet... collapsed. The impact from the explosion, and the destructive power crashed against the palm made of meteors.

Deafening booms echoed through the entire galaxy, so even the four cultivators who had escaped far into the distance could hear the sound clearly.

Despite that bang, the huge meteor palm did not stop moving, and the cold harrumph still echoed in space. The palm had seized the collapsing planet, so it was hard to tell clearly whether the planet had exploded by itself or had been crushed by the palm.

Despite that, the meteor palm did not stop moving and started closing up to seize the planet's pieces. It seemed as if the owner of that palm was certain that the power that had caused the planet to collapse was in the shattered pieces, along with the culprit who had killed Heaven Traversers.

"A Master of Fate, Lives, and Death, hmm?" a low voice said from the shattered planet.

That voice was calm, and there was no rise or fall in its tone to indicate any emotions. If anyone looked at the shattered planet at that moment, they would clearly see a man standing on one of the shattered continents, his hair fluttering in space.

Needless to say, this man was Su Ming.

"You're just asking for death!" an aloof voice said in space. The meteor palm then moved even faster. In the blink of an eye, it closed in on Su Ming as if it wanted to bury him together with the shattered planet in space.

"Just who exactly is asking for death?!" At the instant Su Ming spoke, Ecang's projection manifested around him. The huge shadow of the gigantic tree swiftly appeared in the universe and crashed into the hand moving to seize him.

Booming sounds spread through the area at that instant. The hand crashed into Ecang's projection, then froze momentarily. As Ecang's projection trembled, it looked as if it was about to collapse. It swayed violently, and blood could be seen trickling out of the corners of Su Ming's mouth where he stood under the projection.

"Ecang..." an aloof voice said from space, but the owner of the voice could not be seen. "Even if you have Ecang's blood, those who offend Heaven Traversers have to die."

As the voice spread out, the gigantic meteor hand tightened its grip once again and crushed the Ecang projection with a bang. Su Ming shuddered and coughed up a mouthful of blood. With a pale face, he retreated swiftly, but there was no panic in his eyes, only calmness.

The Ecang projection behind him appeared once again and continuously crashed into the palm coming to seize him. The booming sounds that rang in space rose and fell, and every single time they collided with each other, Su Ming's body would tremble. He could sense the great strength within the palm, but similarly, he also sensed that the Master of Fate, Lives, and Death was not as strong as the one from the four Great True Worlds acting as a garrison in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence.

Su Ming needed about a dozen something breaths for his clone to truly arrive from the moment his projection appeared. To him, this time was really nothing. In truth, his preparations beforehand had been perfect, and his Ecang clone could arrive at any moment.

But he did not do so.

He stood and watched the Ecang projections be destroyed repeatedly while the giant palm closed in on him. It replaced the sky, the galaxy, and everything else, but he still did not have his Ecang clone appear.

Because he noticed that each time his Ecang projection crumbled, the projection that would appear next would be much stronger than before, just like how a normal piece of metal would need to be refined thousands of times before it turned into steel that would not bend or break. This was a form of refinement.

Booms echoed in the air. After the umpteenth time Su Ming's Ecang projection reappeared after being destroyed, the meteor hand had almost clenched into a fist. When Su Ming cast his gaze around the area, everything he saw around him was the meteor hand, and it looked as if he had nowhere to run and nowhere to hide!

If anyone looked from the galaxy, they would be able to see that as the gigantic meteor hand continued furling into a fist, it looked about to crush everything in its palm, including the planet, all its lives, and the galaxy around it.

At that instant, Su Ming raised his head, and the purple line at the center of his brows opened. Purple light shone from it, and the Malicious Eye appeared. In an instant, the meteor hand above him was magnified endlessly in his eyes. As it was continuously enlarged, he saw the cracks in it.

Su Ming's gaze focused, and he leaped up at full speed, even calling back his Ecang projection and having it fuse with him, making him even faster. He flew out in an instant. When a loud bang reverberated through the entire galaxy that belonged to Heaven Traversers and the meteor palm clenched its fist to crush everything, Su Ming flew out from the crack he had seen with his Malicious Eye!

From the distance, a long arc could be seen flying out from the palm when the gigantic meteor hand seized the galaxy. At the same time, a grim voice came from Su Ming's mouth.

"Ecang!"

Once he said it, the illusory projection of the Ecang tree immediately appeared behind him. It swiftly became clear, and a man with purple hair walked out from within!

This man's appearance instantly caused the universe to tumble about, the world to roar, and the galaxy to look as if huge waves had appeared within it. Endless visible ripples appeared in the galaxy around the purple-haired man. These ripples fell back together, though a normal person would not be able to tell just what these ripples were.

However, Su Ming knew that these ripples were the laws in this galaxy. At that moment, the laws were being forcefully expelled as Su Ming's Ecang clone appeared in the area, as if the galaxy had become Ecang's territory once it arrived. Within this territory, all laws, all wills, and all rules would work only due to Ecang's will.

A long purple robe, long purple hair... and a purple eye at the center of his brows!

At the instant Su Ming's Ecang clone appeared, his cultivation base clone moved, and his clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole walked out of his cultivation base clone. With Su Ming's soul as a guide, these three clones of his overlapped in the galaxy.

As they did that and turned into one, Su Ming raised his head, and a sinister smile appeared at the corners of his lips. A wave of deep malice spread out from his body, as if his existence alone was the source of all evil in the world. It looked as if all light was replaced by a dark shade of purple at the spot where he stood.

His power rose ceaselessly from Solar Kalpa Realm, and even though he still had yet to become a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death, he was already infinitesimally close to it. An ancient presence also spread out from his body, and this feeling of age filled up the entire area, as if it could even cause the galaxy to fall into decay.

With a sinister smile, Su Ming raised his right hand and seized space. Immediately, a white stone appeared on his right palm. Naturally, that stone was the Enchanted Treasure he had obtained from the Yu Family - Peace Arrives When the Elephant is Here!

He raised his left hand above his head, and when the universe trembled, a huge mountain appeared in Su Ming's left hand. That mountain... was Dao Avenue Mountain!

At the same time, a vast amount of purple fog spread out from Su Ming's feet. It swept in all directions while rumbling and filled the galaxy, changing it to Ecang's galaxy within an instant.

"I want to fight you!" Su Ming looked at a spot in space in the distance, and a figure gradually appeared before his eyes.

It was a middle-aged man with long blue hair, dressed in a long, light blue robe. This man was incredibly handsome... and he had no wings. There was wisdom in his eyes, and it could make others feel as if they were in another galaxy when they looked into them, and they would be unable to free themselves from it.

The man's lips were thin, giving him a slightly unkind expression, which turned into a callous air about him. He looked at Su Ming calmly.

"Should I call you Ecang... or Tian Xie Zi's disciple?" the middle-aged man asked flatly.

"So you've been here since a long time ago." Su Ming smiled faintly.

"Leave behind your hands and feet. I will make an allowance for Ecang and let you leave with your head."

The middle-aged man's expression remained calm. As he spoke, his tone allowed no refusal. When his voice traveled outwards, the purple fog around Su Ming tumbled, and in the galaxy where laws had been chased away, laws appeared once again, but this time, they belonged to the middle-aged man.